## THE ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

CHRYSAL

Wherein are exhibited Views of SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES;

INTERESTING ANECDOTES,

Of the most noted Perfons in every Rank of Life,

Through whole Hands it has palled.

## BY AN ADEPT.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

To flow Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likenefs, And the very age and body of the Times His Form and Preflure. Shikefpeare.

VOL. III.



EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

Lottout: Frinted for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternollo-Row A 1 fold by all the Bookfellers is Greaz-Britain and Irelands

# CHRYSAL:

OR, THE 9 ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

## CHAP. I.

The fully of a person's prostituting his character to please his company aggravated by the dangerous mislake of ridicule for applause. Chrysal's master changes place with the chaptain, and preaches him an interesting sermon, in which, among remarks more just than police, he gives an uncommon reason for the particular deformity of vice in women.

HAVE already taken notice of the effect which the advice and example of the captain had upon every one in the faip. The officers lived like a family of brothers, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleafure; but, though all paid due refpect to what he faid, it was impolible to work fuch an inflantaneous reformation, but that fome of them would now and then jeft among themselves upon his conduct, as, from comparison with that of others of his rank, inconfiftent with his character; and in other refpects indulge in the levities of difcourse and behaviour too general among perfors not much accufomed to the rules of rational convertation.

But, whatever allowances the circumftances of their education might claim for fuch fallies in the officers, the perfon who transgreffed most was certainly entitled to none. This was the chaplain, who, to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically fanctified, ran into the opposite extreme. The felfish vanity of man always takes pleafure in feeing any perfon debafe himfelf by acting beneath his character, especially if that character is fuch as appears to be placed in a more respectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ship, and think he's placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleated with his profitution, which he, by a common mistake of ridicule for applause, gave still further iato, imagining VOL. III.

imagining they laughed with him, when, in reality, they laughed at him.

But my mafter beheld the matter in another light, and taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themfelves in the ward-room, ' I have obferved " with much concern, Sir,' faid he, " that you are falling s into an error, which I have known prove fatal to many gentlemen of your profession. This is departing from vour character, in order to accommodate yourielf to · what you think the humour of your company. · lieve me, Sir, no man ever did fo, who did not imme-· diately fall into contempt with the very people whole · approbation he ftrove to purchase at so dear a rate .--. The greatest libertine despises a clergyman who is a · libertine; and the reason is plain. You are set apart · from the reft of mankind, to perform the rites of religion, and inculcate virtue by your precepts and exam-• ple; and for this you are paid by the public, who ex-· pect that you fhould earn your wages, by doing your " duty; and look upon those who do not as no better than cheats. This may appear an odd way of fpeaksing, but it is true neverthelefs. On the other hand, · where a clergyman fulfils his duty, and enforces his · preaching by his practice, though he may not ablo-" lutely reform all those with whom he converses, yet he will certainly work this good effect, that he will keep . them in awe, and prevent their running into outrageous lengths of wickedness, at least in his presence. For, · whatever people may inconfiderately imagine, no man ever acted in character, who was not refpected ; no man ever acted out of character, who was not defpiled.

<sup>6</sup> Do but reflect a moment, in what light you yourfelf would l ok upon a lady, who fhould fpeak obtenely. fwear, drink, and talk of fighting, and it will fhew you the juffice of this remark. For what makes thefe vices fo particularly hateful in a woman, is not any thing in their nature particularly contradictory to the fex, more than ours, but becaufe they are contrary to her character. I beg your pardon, Sir, for talking to you in

f this

this free manner, in respect to your conduct, which I am fenfible concerns only yourfelf; but as the errors ' you have fallen into appear to have arilen merely from ' inadvertency and miltake, I think it my duty to caution you against the danger of them, sparticularly in ' your prefent fituation, with which I have had the op-' portunity of being much better acquainted than you · poffibly can be. I was in the fervice long, very long, before you were born, and have been intimate with many chaplains, but never knew one who profituted ' his character to humour his company, who was not eneglected by them when they had it in their power to " have ferved him; as, on the contrary, I have known " many inflances of those who have reaped the happy fruits of a regular and virtuous conduct, by which they acquired an effeem that proved the foundation of their fortune; and if all have not been equally fuccefsful, their difappointment must be attributed to fome other caufe. I would not by this be understood to advise ' you to a morofe diftance and stiffnels of behaviour, or alperity of reproof upon every occalion. They feldom, if ever, do good, in any fituation; in yours they will certainly do hurt, by piquing falle pride to act in opposition to them, without regard to the confequences. An obliging temper, and an uniformly decent ' conduct, lead infenfibly to imitation, where contra-' diction or direst admonition would be held impertinent. ' Thefe hints are fo obvious, that they may feem unne-"Ceffary; but it is want of attention to them which has ' made to many chaplains milcarryin life, and indeed has ' brought the very character into difrepute.'

The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good fenfe, nor virtuous inclination, was thruck with the juftice and prese of this rebuke. He thanked my mafter if the moft ingenuous manner, and promifed to regulate his future conduct by his addice. Such a change at first naturally expoled Eim to the merriment of his companions; but as my mafter took his part, and shewed them the injuftice of fuch behaviour, it foon wore off, and he had the heart-Vol. III. A 3

6

felt fatisfaction to find himfelf treated with friendly refpect and confisience by those whose gross familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

## CHAP. II.

Chryfal defcribes true compassion; and shows the general confequence of a man's acknowledging distress, with the reasons of it. Chryfal's master is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the caufe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generosity. Chryfal enters into a new service.

A S the captain maintained the moft friendly intercourfe I with his officers, he foon observed that my master laboured under fome heavy diffrefs of mind. This naturally raifed his compaffion, and as real compaffion never sees distrets, which it is not defirous of alleviating, he frequently took occasion, when they were by themfelves, to turn his discourse upon such subjects as hethought might lead him to open himfelf ; but finding that modelty, or a referve contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and observation that the knowledge of a man's being in diffrefs always finks him in the effeem of his companions, by cutting off their hopes of fervice from him, and alarming their apprehenfions of his expecting allilance from them, prevented his taking the hint, he refolved to break through forms, and alk him directly.

Seeing him therefore, one day, walking the quarterdeck, in a mood of deepeft melancholy, he called him into the great cabin, and defiring him to fitdown, after a little general chat, 'I fear, fir,' faid he, ' that fome-' thing hangs upon your fpirits. If it is proper to be ' communicated, let me know what it is, and depend ' upon every affiftance in my power to make you ealys I ' alk not from idle or impertinent, curiofity.'-- ' Sir,' antwered my mafter, ftruck with the manner in which he ' fives, and fhall therefore obey your kind commands ' without feruple. It is too true that I am unhappy ; ' and

and I fear my unhappiness is too common. I have de-' voted my life to a profession in which Ishave ferved my ' country above forty years with fidelity ; and I will take the liberty to fay with fome fuccefs : And now, when 'my conftitution is broken with wounds, fatigue, and ' change of climates, when nature calls for reft and re-' frefhment, the only reward I have to expect is poverty, ' and its inseparable attendant, contempt. This, fir, is ' the caufe of my unhappinels; and fuch a caufe, as I 'believe you will think to be a just one.'- ' Very true, ' fir,' replied the captain, ' it is a just one; and what ' must affect every man of spirit, and a generous way of thinking. But you fhould not yield to it too far ! You ' are ftill in the vigour of life; and, while the war continues, thould look forward with hope. Though you ' have been unfuccefsful hitherto, fortune may prove more 'kind.'-' Alas, fir !' returned my mafter. ' I have been to long cheated by hope, that I now deteft it. "When I came out upon this last expedition, our force " made me fo confident of fuccels, and I was fo well ac-' quainted with the wealth in the place, that I unhappily ' gave way to hope, and ran into expences, which, though far from being unneceffary, were imprudent, and " threaten now to involve me in ruin, on my return home, ' as it has been thought proper by our fuperiors to rate 'our fervice in the conquest at so low a price.'-' If that ' is the cafe, then !' faid the captain, ' do not return till matters mend. Whenever I am ordered home, I'll take care to get you removed into another thip. Your flaying abroad on fuch an account is not inconfiftent ' wich the ftricteft honour, as you do it with an intention " truely honeft."

<sup>6</sup> Dear fir, <sup>5</sup> anfwered my mafter, <sup>6</sup> that is very true. <sup>5</sup> But I am precluded even from the wretched relief of a <sup>6</sup> voluntary exile.<sup>3</sup> I have a wife and children at home, <sup>6</sup> the apprehention of whote diffrefies drives me to delpair. <sup>6</sup> It was to clothe and fettle them in a attle habitation, <sup>6</sup> where they might enjoy the indifferible neceflaries of <sup>6</sup> life with fome degree of comfort, that I anticipated my <sup>6</sup> function

fuccefs in the manner I mentioned; and now, as the fuccefs has fallen fo far fhort of what I thought just exe pectation, all the former favings of my life, (favings from the very neceffities of nature,) will be torn away · by the rapacious hands of merciles creditors, to make " up the deficiency in the articles bought of themfelves to discharge their demands, and my wretched family " thrown upon the unfriendly world, without its being in " my power to affift them. I must therefore return, and 'go into jail, to prevent their flarving in the flreets. What affected myfelf only, honeft indignation enabled me to fupport. I have feen boys, whole ignorance I defpifed, and men whofe principles I detefted, prefer-" red to command, while my fervices were over-looked ; but, as I had not the interest of the former, nor the ' modifh merit of the latter, I bore my fate with pa-' tience. But to have those dearer to me than life ex-' posed to mifery, is more than I can bear.'- ' Nor shall 'you bear it !' replied the captain, who had feigned to cough, to hide the fympathetic tear that gliffened in his eye, ' Nor shall you bear it ! How much is the debt that " alarms you ? I will advance it for you directly; and not " that only, I will take upon me to make your merit, (to which I am no ftranger,) known to your fuperiors, in fuch a light as shall not fail of just reward.

• O Sir!' returned my mafter, as foon as the fulnels of his heart gave him utterance, ' how gen I fubmit to ' obligations, to which it is impoffible I fhould ever make ' any return !' ' All the return I defire' anfivered the cap? tain, ' is your friend? ip. Speak ! how much do you ' want? The packet is yet in fight. I will order a fig-' nal to be made for her, and give you a draft upon my ' agent.'--' Good heaven !' exclaimed my mafter. ' Can ' there be cluch virtue in man.'-- ' Come! what is the ' fum ?' interrupted the captain, who wanted to fhorten a converfation, that began to be too affecting to him. ' I ' fhall think you doubt my fincerity if you hefitze to ac-' cept of my friend/hip.'--

"Such a doubt," returned my master, whose heart a

gufh

gush of tears had lightened, ' would be a blacker crime than ever ftained my foul ! No ! I receive your beneficence with humble gratitude, as from the hand of hea-'ven, nor will mention any other return but what muft 'be made to that, till it shall be pleased to bless me ' with better ability.' Then pulling out his pocket-book, 'Here is the account of what I owe,' continued he, giving him fome papers, and a purfe containing little more than his fhare of the price of the imuggler's boat : ' And " here is all my worldly wealth, which is no more than 'an affignment of my milerable prize-money, and thefe ' few pieces of gold, thrown by fortune in my way, most-'ly fince our hands were tied up by the capitulation. 'For the balance I must be your debtor.'- 'For the balance !' answered the captain, returning the purfe and the affignment. ' No! you shall be my debtor,' if you will call it fo ! ' for the whole. It would be ftrange ' friendship to strip you of every thing. You may want ' yourfelf.'-

' Excuse me, Sir,' interrupted my master, unable to suppress the delicacy, the dignity of honour, ' I am not lo ' low a wretch, as to accept of more than I indifpenfibly ' want ; and that for perfons dearer to me than myfelf. ' If you will not permit me to make the debt as light as " I can, it is impoffible for me to receive your friendship, 'however effential to the happinels of my heart. I am forry you should have entertained fo mean an opinion of "me."- ' I have the highest opinion of you !' replied the captain, who faw what pain he had given him, ' and fpoke ' in the warmth of my regard, without the most distant defign of giving you offence. But you shall make your ' own terms, on this condition, though, that if you have 'any occasion for money, you will apply to me with the " freedom of a friend."

To fuch a propolal, it was impoffible to refufe affenting. My malter complied, and the captain taking the money, &c. from him, defired that he would order a fignal to be made for the packet, and write his letters, while he himfelf fhould draw a bill upon his agent.—

IO.

The fentiments expressed by the captain made it a pleafure to me to gals into his fervice on this occasion. As foon as the lieutenant went out, my new mafter walked a turn or two about his cabin, in the exalted happinels of confcious virtue; and then drawing a bill for confiderably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he defired that he fhould be called, and when he entered, ' I beg your ' pardon,' faid he, ' for interrupting you, but it is to defire that you will prefent my compliments to your wife, and tell her I beg the will accept of a trifling prefent from me, which I have taken the liberty to include in the bill. Come ! no words ! In this I will not be con-' tradicted.' "O fir !' anfwered the lieutenant, catching his hand, as he reached him the bill, and kiffing it eagerly, ' this is too much ! my heart will burft. -- Saying which, he went out of the cabin, in a filence more expreffive of his foul, than all the flights of eloquence.

#### CHAP. III.

Hiftory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A comparison between the rewards of merit, in the land and fea fervices; with a remarkable inflance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The confequence of attempting to fet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himfelf remarkable.

WHEN every thing was fettled, and the packet failed, the lieutenant defired leave to wait upon my mafter; and as foon as he entered, ' I'come, fir, ' faid he, ' to pay you the thanks, which the functions of my heart. ' would not let me utter before. You have raifed me to ' happinet's from the Wweft ftate of defpair.'--- ' Hold my ' friend !' anlwered my mafter, taking his hand, and fqueezing it tenderly, ' Speak no more of it I conjute ' you. Lam abundantly overpaid for what I have done, ' by the pleafure of having ferved a min of merit; and final think you repine at my happines in being able to ' purchafe that pleafure, if I ever hear the affair mention-' ed more.' o

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he faw opprefied with gratitude, he then changed the conversation to another

fubject, when the lieutenant flowed fo much good fenfe, and folid judgment, that my mafter could not forbear expreffing his aftoniflument, that fuch a man flould have been fo long unpromoted in the fervice.

" If you can have patience to hear the ftory of my life," answered the lieutenant, ' it will foon explain that difficulty to you .- My father was an officer in the army, " who was rewarded for the loss of a leg, and thirty years fervice with the half-pay of a captain of foot. As he ' had a wife and children to maintain and provide for, he ' retired to a cheap country, where he lived in the most rigid æconomy, in hopes of faving, for he could not " make any thing, being precluded from every kind of induftry, by the profession to which he had devoted his 'youth. The first acquaintance a stranger gets in a ' country place is the parfon of the parish. It was my ' father's happinels to fix his habitation, where there was 'a clergyman, who would have been a valuable acquaintance in any place, and who was equally happy 'in the acquifition of a rational acquaintance in him. ' The common intercourse of neighbourhood was, therefore, foon improved between them into the ftrongeft friendship, in the intimacy of which, as my father would often naturally mention his anxiety for his children, his friend perfuaded him to breed me, the eldeft, to the feafervice, in which he thought he himfelf might be able ' to ferve me, by his intereft with feveral commanders, with whom he had been acquainted formerly, when "chaplain to a man of war. "That is the fervice !" ' would the good man fay, with pleafure fparkling in his 'eyes." " That is the fervice in which merit is never dif-" regarded. You would not have been laid afide after " thirty years, to pine upon five fhillings a day, if you had "been bred to the fea. No! no! merit is all that is ne-"" ceffary there." @

<sup>6</sup> Such an argument was too flattering to my father's <sup>6</sup> hopes to be refifted. Though he felt the evil of not <sup>6</sup> having been bred to a bufinels himfelf, he was charmed <sup>6</sup> at the thought of his fon's being placed in the way of <sup>6</sup> rifing

TI

12

<sup>6</sup> rifing to an higher fphere, and readily affented to the <sup>6</sup> advice of hts triend, who, not content with mere ad-<sup>7</sup> vice, infifted on taking me home with him, and giving <sup>8</sup> me fuch an education as fhould qualify me to make a <sup>6</sup> figure in the profeflion to which he had directed me. <sup>6</sup> If ever a man of merit in the fea-fervice," would he of-<sup>6</sup> ten fay, "fails of rifing, it is for want of having had a <sup>6</sup> good education to found his hopes upon. A mere fea-<sup>6</sup> man may work a fhip, "but an admiral thould be a <sup>6</sup> (cholar."

' How well this reafoning was founded experience daily " fhows ! though it would be ingratitude in me to arraign ' it, as the little tafte for letters which I acquired from ' his care, if it has not contributed to my advancement, ' has at least enabled me to support the shock of difappointment, as well as to avoid many evils, into which I have feen others, who had not the fame 4 advantage, fall. At fixteen (for he infifted that it was " most wretched policy to turn a boy loofe upon the world · before he had come to the ufe of reafon, and was well ' instructed in the principles of morality and religion, for " the fake of gaining a couple of years advance :) At fixteen, I fay, I was fent to fea, provided with a cheft of books, and mathematical inftruments, and a good fuit of cloths, not to difcredit the recommendation ' which my beft friend gave me to an admiral, with " whom he had been most intimate when a lieutenant; and whofe readinefs to ferve him in any thing he would · not admit a doubt of. On my prefenting my letter, " the admiral at first had forgot the name, but recol-<sup>4</sup> lecting himfelf at length on my mentioning fome cir-<sup>4</sup> cumftances which I had often heard my friend dwell ' upon with pleafure, " Very true," faid he, " I remember " him now. He made the best bowl of punch of any " man in the navy."-

<sup>4</sup> This was all the notice the great man took of him, <sup>5</sup> or of me on his account, except I should add, that on <sup>6</sup> his captain's observing I should make a good figure on <sup>6</sup> the quarter deck, I was directly rated a midshipman-

a favour for which I foon found I was indebted to his · caution of fending me well dreffed, much more than to ' his intereft. Though I felt this difappointment of my first hopes very feverely, on my friend's account as well ' as my own, I could not think of fhocking him with the ' news, but faying, in general terms, that I had been ' well received, refolved to apply myfelf to my bufinefs, ' and try whether I could not deferve that favour which he had failed to procure me. As I had been accuftomed to conversation very different from that of those with whom alone I could now converse, I took every opportunity, when off duty, of running to my books. But the relief I found from this was for the prefent ' over-balanced by the general ridicule into which it drew ' me; especially, as I not only avoided obscenity, fwearing, ' and drinking myfelf, but had also been so imprudent as ' to rebuke others for them. I was immediately nick-' named the parfon, and avoided by every one in the fhip. ' I need not defcribe to you the fituation of a petit offi-' cer, infulted by those below him, ridiculed by his equals, ' and looked down upon with contempt by his fuperiors, ' who forgot they ever were in his flation themfelves. Ι bore it for fifteen years, at the end of which time, ' having the good fortune to be fent to London, with a prefs-gang, on purpofe to mortify me, for I always ' difliked that particular duty more than any other in the ' fervice, on feeing an advertisement in the news-papers, that all who were qualified by their standing to be lieutenants in the navy fhould attend to pais their examina-' tion, I offered myfelf without my other introduction, " or intereft, and was appointed to a fhip. In this fta-' tion I have now done my duty for five and twenty years, " without reprehension ; but as I have no corporation in-" tereft to pufh me at home, none of the modern polite ac-" complifhments to recommend me to the favourites of for-' tune, whom I occafionally meet in the fervice, n r have ever had the good luck to find an opportunity of mak-'ing myfelf remarkable, by any action of eclat, though in ' itself no more than a fucceisful blunder, my uniform · conduct VOL. III. B

13

14

conduct and care have paffed unnoticed, and I remain
a lieutenant fill.'

The circumftances of this ftory affected my mafter in the ftrongeft manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand, and defiring him not to defpair, repeated his promile of uting all his intereft to ferve him, of the fuccefs of which he had no reafon to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One instance, though, of my master's conduct in his military capacity I cannot forbear mentioning, as it flows his character in the ftrongeft light, which was, that he never interfered in the business of his officers, but if he happened to fee any thing which he difapproved, infread of interpoling his own authority publicly, and giving contrary orders, he always fpoke privately to the officer on duty, and giving his directions under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immediately from him, by which means he fpared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and confequently leffened in their opinion. This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but alfo contributed greatly to advance the fervice. For as every officer knew that he should have the credit or bare the blame of his own actions, they all exerted themfelves with the utmost ardour ; whereas, on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careless of course, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate to himfelf the merit of fuccels; if they do not even take a malignant pleafure in any mifearriage, the blame of which they have to juft an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAP. IV.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of fpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. Chryfal's magter meets his brother. Some account of him He reprefents certain matters in an odd light. Chryfal enters in o his fervice. Conclusion of his character, Chryfal enquits his fervice, on an uncommon occafion, for one jrom which he palfes, in the ufual courje of business, into that of the general. WHEN

WHEN we arrived at the place of our definations we found the fhore covered with all extensive encampment, and every thing wearing the appearance of the most active war. The first thing my master did was of course to wait upon the general, whole operations he was fent to affilt. He met him viewing an occasional fortification, which he had caufed to be railed to train his army to the method of making regular fieges and attacks; and marking out a piece of ground to be fowed with vegetables, to correct the bad effects of the falt provisions which his men had lived upon in their paffage thither, and preferve them in health. The account he received from my mafter of the heavy loss fuftained in the expedition from which he had just come, gave him visible pleafure, as it feemed to fet his own conduct, which was diametrically the reverse of that observed there, in the most advantageous light.

' I wonder,' faid he, looking around him with an air of confcious exultation, ' how officers can reconcile it to ' themfelves to throw away the lives of their men in fuch ' a manner ! For my part, I act upon very different prin-' ciples. I take care not only to give my troops an in-' fight into all the various branches of the military art, ' but also to keep them in such health as may enable them ' to reap the advantage of their experience. There is no-' thing to bad in war as precipitation. It was the fole caule 'of the late general's defeat and death. '- 'Yes !' interrupted, an officer who flood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience. ' Delay is full as bad. Your troops want neither health nor experience to conquer every opposition they can possibly meet; and will accomplish the end they were fent upon before your cabbages are fit for them to eat, if you will but lead them against their enemies, and not give them time to retire with their effects into places whither it is impoffible for an army to puriue them, while your men wafte their time and fpirits in the foolish parade of mock battles and freges, till they ' lofe their ardour with delays which can aniwer no end but that of protracting the war, and thereby lengthen-'ing a lucrative command.' B 2 Such

16

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and ftruck the general with equal furprife and indignation, as it touched him in the tendereft part ; however, diffembling his paffion, of which he had an abiolute command, 'I would ' have you to know, fir,' faid he, ' that I think it the · higheft affurance in you to attempt cenfuring my conduct, who are fent merely to execute my orders. When ' I afk your opinion, it will be time enough for you to give it, till then, obedience, not advice, is what I ex-' pect from you. If I did not hold it beneath me to fhow · refentment to one fo abfolutely fubject to my power, you · fhould instantly find the effect of this infolence. But ' prefume not on that protection any further, as you regard your fafety. No man provokes me with impuni-' ty.'- ' N-n-nor me !' fputtered the officer, whole temper, hot as that of the general was cool, caught fire at the fainteft fhadow of offence, and flamed almost to madnefs, as foon as rage permitted him to articulate a word, ' Nor m-m-me. 1 feek no p-p-protection but my fword, with which I will v-v-vindicate my own honour, and make good what I fay .- Talk to m-' m-me of fafety and im-p-p-punity !'-

The affair now became ferious, these words ftriking at the general's fafety as well as his honour, and convincing him that he must support his dignity by a vigorous effort. ' What !' retorted he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended authority. ' Do you menace me, too? I fuppofe you defign to raife a mutiny in the army, but · I'll prevent that.'-Then turning to an officer who attended, ' Take that madman away,' continued he, ' and ' put him under a guard, till he recovers his reafon. Such ' behaviour must not go unpunished.'-Then addreffing himfelf to my master with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led away speechless and convulsed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner; an honour, however, which my mafter declined accepting that day, as he was most impatient to fee his brother, who bore a principal command in the army under the general. The meeting of these

brothers

brothers was truly affecting. The inftinctive connexion of nature had been indiffolubly cemented between them by the facred bond of friendship, founded on a sense of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the fame principles, they had both devoted themselves to the profession of arms, in the different fervices of the land and fea, as if to avoid the jealoufy of rivalihip, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him in the road to honour. Undebauched by affluence," and difdaining to wafte his youth at home in luxury, when the caufe of his country called for his affiftance, the elder bravely came to feek for glory in thefe inhospitable wilds, with as much ardour as my master purfued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours, which he might transmit to his own posterity, equal to those which his brother inherited from his illustrious anceftors. When the tender enquiries of affection were reciprocally answered, my master gratified the curiofity of his brother with a particular account of his late dearly bought fuccefs, clofing the black detail with fome remarks on the different conduct of the general of this army which were much to his advantage.

' Your reflections, my dearest brother,' answered the officer, ' are most just, as things appear to you. But when ' you have had an opportunity of feeing turther, I fear you " will find reafon to change your fentiments, and that the delay here proceeds at bottom from the fame principle ' with the precipitation which produced fuch terrible effects with you, and heaven grant it produces not as bad. ' Interest is the object every where; and whether that is ' purfued by facrificing the force on rafh and ill-conducted attempts, to gain an immediate prize, or by letting them melt away in inaction, to accumulate the profits of command, makes no difference in the end. I would ' not be understood from this to justify the officer for ar-" raigning the general's conduct in fo public and perfonal a manner. Such ungoverned warmth is inexcufable. Proper respect must be paid to those who bear authority or the effect of that authority ceales ; indeed, it is not to them. B 3

17

18

. them, but to him who delegates the authority, the re-• fpect is paid. A general at the head of an army repre-• fents his fovereign in the plenitude of his power, and to ' fuffer any flight to be flown to his delegated character, " were to betray the truft of that delegation. For this rea-' fon, I think his punifiment was necessary, and there-' fore just: I wish I could add, that it was equally fo fiom the injuffice as from the circumftances of the ac-" cufation which occafioned it; but to any one who will ' not fhut his eyes it must appear beyond a doubt, that his great crime was fpeaking too much, and too plain truth ; for, with all our boafted care for the prefervation ' of the men, their diffress are fuch as have not left me ' a penny in my pocket, for I cannot thut my hand where " my heart is opened. In fhort, I am fo fick of the whole fcene, that I have folicited the command of a detached · party, with which I hope to flow, that the native bra-· very of Britons, when led with fpirit, requires but lit-· tle experience to enable them to conquer more formid-· able foes than naked favages, led by a few wretched Frenchmen, in a condition not much better. I fet out . to morrow morning, and think it a particular happines " that you have arrived time enough for me to have this " interview with you."

The reft of their conversation is not neceffary to be repeated, as it turned upon their own domeftic concerns. This much only it is but juft for me to obferve, that it flowed their conduct in the intercourfe and relations of private life to be as amiable as that in their public capa<sup>2</sup> cities was exalted; and proved that moral virtue is the beft foundation for true heroifm.—My matter's brother having fome prefent occation for money. I here entered into his fervice. You may judge I remained not long in the poffellion of my new mafter. His brother had no fooner left him, than he paid me away, and a large number of my fellows, to a merchant, for fome stillions which he thought it neceffary to make, at his own expence, to the provisions made by the public for the fup-

port

port and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniences of a campaign in an uninhabited country. The fentiments expressed by my master, in the effusion of his foul, to his brother, showed his character in the juftest light; I shall, therefore, only add, that as he acted from principles firmly established on the invariable basis of reaion, there was no danger of his deviating from the path in which he fet out.

So bright a protpect made it a pain for me to quit his fervice fo fuddenly; but I have fince met many mortifications of the fame kind, my flay being always florteft in the beft hands. My continuance, though from anothermotive, was not much longer with my next mafter, the merchant, who, in the common courfe of foliciting permiflion for a flip of his to fail with a cargo that muft be ruined by delay, an embargo having been laid on all the fhipping in the place, in the unfathomable wifdom of the ruling powers, to promote fome unintelligible plan of fervice, gave me to the general's clerk, from whom, in the fame courfe of bufinets, I came into the fervice of the general.

#### CHAP. V.

Chryfal's master makes fome characteristic reflections. — He is surprised at the officer's refusing to make up matters ; and grows a particular reason for fome people's rising in the world. An extraordinary perfonage enters to bim. Defoription of him. He grows a character of the native Americans; and offers fome interesting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the clight plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reasons why the Americans are defined as of gold. Chryfal changes bis fervice.

WHEN I entered into the poffeffion of my new mafter, he was waiting in his tent, with the moff anxious impatignce, for the return of a perfon whom he had exployed to mediate, as of himfelf, between him and the officer, whole prefumption in during to find fault with his meafures he had thought proper to punish in the manner I juft now mentioned.

19

20

His reflections on an affair that ftruck fo dangeroufly. at his pride and avarice, the ruling paffions of his heart, could not be very agreeable; but the fight of the money gave them a pleafing turn. Having asked the clerk a few quettions in the way of bulinets, and difinified him, he took the purfe, and weighing it in his hand, 'Aye!' faid he, with delight gliftening in his eyes, ' this will do. This embargo was a lucky thought. Let who " will complain of the hindrance it is to the bufinels of the public, it advances mine; and that is all I care for, I came here to ferve myfelf, and not the public; f and as there is neither plunder nor contributions to be s got by activity, I must try what I can do another way, " I thewed my dexterity at hunting favages in the mountains of my own country, and have no defire to renew the chafe here. It was neceffary for me then to do fomething that fhould make me remarkable, and gain . favour with those who I faw must prevail in the end, and therefore I fpared no trouble or fatigue, neither friend nor foe, to convince them of my attachment; and in reward they have now given me this command, ' in conducting which I must use delay to reap the ad-· vantages of my former activity. Fabius faved Rome by deby; let me but make my fortune by it, and I " envy not his fame. I prefer this found," chinking the purfe, ' to the empty noise of public acclamation, the ' fhouts of a giddy mob, who blefs and gurfe with the fame breath, and without knowing why they do either, No! no! this is mufic that charms my ear.

His meditations were broken off here by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation; nor even accept of his liberty till he fhould be acquitted by a court-martial, and have juffice done him for the affront offered to his honour. Such an account was far from being agreeable to my mafter, who, for broious reafons, withed to have every thing to go as quietly as poffible. After fome paufe, ' This is a damned affair,' faid he, ' but we mult now elemmake the beft we can of it. Who

f could



<sup>6</sup> could have thought that a countryman of my own would <sup>6</sup> have proved fo refractory. We have always been re-<sup>6</sup> markable for hanging well together. One and all was <sup>6</sup> the word, or we could never have done fuch great mat-<sup>6</sup> ters. If it is once found out that we can be divided, <sup>6</sup> we fhall foon lofe our confequence, and every man be <sup>6</sup> reduced to the poor profect of depending on his own me-<sup>6</sup> rit. However, fince he will not accept of his liberty <sup>6</sup> here, he fhall e'en go home a prifoner, and recover it <sup>6</sup> there as well as he can. I am on the right fide; and <sup>6</sup> don't fear but my friends will bring me through more <sup>6</sup> than this; gloecially, as it is a national concern to us <sup>6</sup> all alike. In the mean time we mult double our dili-<sup>6</sup> gence to make hay while the fun fhines.<sup>7</sup>

The gentleman, who was in all his fecrets, acknowledged the force of his reafoning; and was going to communicate to him fome new ftrokes of management, when word was brought my mafter, that a perion to whom he could not properly be denied, defired to fee him. There was fomething in the whole appearance of this perfon that struck me with the strongest curiosity the moment I faw him. His stature, above the common fize of man, was formed with the justeft proportion, and denoted ability to execute the most difficult attempts, which the determined and enterprifing ipirit that animated his looks could urge him to. His open countenance, in which humanity and reafon attempered refolution, flewed the genuine workings of his foul; and his whole deportment was in the unaffected eafe of natural liberty, above the hypocritical formality of studied rules of behaviour, devised only to deceive.

As foon as he entered, ' I am come, Sir,' faid he, throwing himlelf careletsly into a chair, and cutting thort all that parade of ceremony, on the punctilious oblervation of which my mafter prided himlelf not a little, ' to ' receive your orders. It is time I thould join my peo-' ple, who grow impatient, as the enemy have begun to ' thir; and I never choole to baulk their firft ardour.-' There is nothing like taking men in the humdur to ' fight,

21

fight, and before they have time to confider too much about it.'-•

' I defign, Sir,' answered my master, with a folemnity and affectation of politenels, which made the strongest contrast to the blunt freedom of the other, ' to call a council of war very foon, at which I shall be glad of ' your affiltance, to form a plan of operations for the campaign. When that is done, and all proper measures concerted, you shall fet out. Precipitation is very dangerous, and directly contrary to the principles of the regular art of opar, by which I mean to proceed. The favages shall find some difference between my conduct and that of my predeceffors, They than't furprife me ' on my march ; nor draw me into an ambush, among " woods and mountains."- " As to the art of war, Sir," replied the other, ' I know no more of it than what hea-' ven and common fenfe have taught me, which is, to find · out the enemy, and beat them as foon as I can, my plan · for which is always directed by prefent circumftanes; " nor do I know how one can be formed to effect, any · other way."

' Your exploits have always been well executed,' returned my mafter, with an air and tone of importance, as defigning to fay fomething that fhould raife him in the opinion of the other, ' but you have hitherto acted " rather in the low fphere of a partifan, than as a general, The duty of a general comprehends much more than what you mention, as you fhall have an opportu-' nity of learning before we take the field, I intend to " go through a regular Course of military operations, to · instruct my officers, and discipline the men, Yourshea-" ven taught generals may beat the enemy, but that is the I leaft part of the care and duty of a general now a-days. " The very leaft part.'- " And pray, Sir, how much ' time will this courfe of operations take up ?'-- ' I can-" not exactly fay; but not above a month or two. I ima-' gine.'- ' A month or two! why, Sir, I hope we shall ' have done the most troublefome part of our work by " that time ; or elfe I do not know what may be the conf fequence,

fequence. For, to be plain with you, thefe delays will never do with the uncivilized Americans, who judge of things only by common fenfe; and cannot be made to comprehend this way of carrying on a war, by lying fill in a camp, and doing nothing. They have formed very difadvantageous notions of the delays already made; and think a man who does not advance to fight his enemy, is afraid of him; and, therefore, if they are not led to action directly, they will defert; fo that, if I flay a month or two here at ichool, to learn a leffon I may never have occafion for, I muft find other forces to put it in gractice with."—

" Cannot you devife any reafon that may account for ' your ftaying, to their fatisfaction ?'- ' Really, fir, not 'I! I never was good at devifing reasons, deftitute of truth, in my life; and have entirely forgot the practice fince I have conversed with the Americans, who are far from being fuch fools as they are too generally thought to be. Though they have not the advantages of learning, they fee by the light of natural reason through all ' the boafted wiles of policy; and, as they never mean deceit themfelves, deteft it in others, however speciously ' difguised; nor ever place confidence a second time, "where it has been once abufed."-" How! the Ameri-" cans never mean deceit ! Surely, you must know better ! ' they are the most perfidious, deceitful favages that bur-' then the earth'; and it would be an advantage to the "world, if the whole race of them was exterminated."

<sup>4</sup> Such of them as converfe much with civilized Europeans, it is too true, learn miny things from them, which are a difgrace to their own favage nature, as you 'call it. But I fpeak of the general dipolition of the people. Treat them with candour, probity, and tendernefs, and they will return them tenfold, in all their intercourfe with you; as, on the other hand, they fel-'doin fail, to retort the contrary treatment with fevere ulury. Nor are they to be blamed. In all their dealings 'with the Europeans they find themfelves impoled upon 'in the groffelt manner; in a manner not fit to be placticed.

24

tifed even with brutes. Their fenfibility is quick, and · their paffions ungoverned ; perhaps, ungovernable ; how • then can it be wondered at, that they make returns in ' kind, v henever they find opportunity, and become the " most dangerous enemies? Whereas, if those passions were attached by good treatment, they would be the " most affectionate, steady, and careful friends. I speak from experience. I treat them as rational creatures; and " they behave as fuch to me. I never deceive them; and they never deceive me. I do them all the good offices 'in my power; and they return them manyfold. In " fhort, I practife to them the behaviour which I with to meet from them, and am never difappointed. All he evils which have been fuffered from them have proceeded from the unhappy error of thinking ourfelves poffeffed of a fuperiority over them, which nature, that is, heaven, has not given us. They are our fellow-creatures; " and in general above our level in the virtues which give " real pre eminence, however defpicably we think of, and " injurioufly we treat them.'-

They are much obliged to your character of them at leaft; whatever others may be. And pray, fir, what 'is it you would have me do, to preferve the good opinion of thefe moft virtuous people?'—' I prefume not, fir, to fay what is proper for you to do. All my defire. 'is, that you will difmifs me directly, in a capacity of 'making good my promifes to my friends; and, by the 'time you fay you fhall be ready to move with your ar-'my, I hope to give a good account of the enemy.'— That, fir, I have no chought of. However, as you are 'fo defirous of going, I fhall not delay you. I'll form 'a plan of operations for you this very day.'—

<sup>6</sup> For me, fir? I do not underftand you. How can <sup>9</sup> you know what will be proper or poffible for me to do. <sup>6</sup> at the diffance of many hundred miles, in a country <sup>9</sup> you are an utter ftranger to. In Europe, where war, <sup>6</sup> like a game at chefs, is played, as I may fay, entirely <sup>6</sup> by att, that method of planning in the cloiet the ope-<sup>6</sup> rations of the field may do, perhaps; but then it is <sup>6</sup> neceffary

25

' neceffary that each fide fhould play the game by the fame rules. A body of Americans, who know nothing ' of the art of war but fighting, might be apt to move fo ' irregularly, as to difconcert the whole fcheme of the game. Indeed, by what I can judge of the matter, ' that very method of planning the operations of a cam-' paign is advantageous only to the general, as it prolongs ' the war, and confequently the emoluments of command, ' by tying up his hand from availing himfelf of any unforeseen circumstances in his favour. Whereas, if ar-' mies were fent out only to fight, as formerly, before the ' improvements in the art of war, the difpute would foon ' be decided, and even the vanquished better off than the 'victors are at prefent, whofe riches and ftrength are fo ' exhausted, by this dilatory way of proceeding, that they ' are not the better for their fuccels. I hope, fir, you do ' not take offence at the plainnels of my speech. I have ' fo long been accustomed to converse with favages, ' who speak just what they think, that I am become ' quite a franger to that diffimulation which is called ' politenels among civilized nations, and mult make ule ' of words in their original intention of conveying my ' thoughts.'-

Not in the leaft, fir! I like your free manner much. It s in the character of a foldier. I will order every thing to be got ready for you directly; and you fhall go as foon as your pleafe, at full liberty to act as you fhall for proper. I hope, fir, I fhall not make a bad ufe of that liberty. And, pray, among the other things, do not forget to order me fome money. —

<sup>6</sup> Money, fir ! What occafion can you poffibly have for <sup>6</sup> money, among favages, who do not know the value of <sup>7</sup> it?—<sup>6</sup> Why really, fir, that queftion is natural. But <sup>8</sup> the matter is, the favages, who come among Europeans, <sup>9</sup> fee every thing governed by gold, in fuch a manner, <sup>9</sup> that they have taken it into their heads we worthip it; <sup>9</sup> and, therefore, are become as eager for it as ourfelves, <sup>9</sup> in hopes of gaining an afcendancy over us, when they <sup>6</sup> have got our god in their poficition.<sup>9</sup> A can-<sup>9</sup> Vol., III. C 26

A confeious heart takes to itfelf more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was faid touched my mafter to the quick, and made him not defire to purfue the convertation any farther with fuch a free fpeaker, nor have fo nice an observer longer about him, to pry into the motives of his actions. Giving him, therefore, the money he required, he withed him fuccels, with a forced politenefs, and difinified him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleafure to me to change my fervice on this occasion; as the idea I had conceived of my new mafter, both from his appearance and convertation, promifed me fome variety, and my curiofity was heartily furfield with the regular art of war.

#### CHAP. VI.

The manner in which Chryfal's mafter was received by his fubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in fome important matters, with the confequences.

S foon as every thing was ready, my mafter fet out A for home, where he arrived without meeting any thing remarkable in his journey, as you may fuppofe, through uninhabited defarts. The reception he met with from his people was the very reverse of what forvereigns ufually meet. They welcomed him with fincere joy and respect, which they expressed in the overflowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade : I fay ' fovereigns,' as he really enjoyed that power in its most rational fenfe, his will being a law to all around him, because they always found it just, and advantageous to them. Though the account which he gave my late mafter of his manner of treating his people showed a just foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the first rulers of the earth, was founded allo on the relations of nature, and fupported by its strongest ties, he being literally the father of his fubjects, the king of his own family. To explain this it's neceffary to inform you, that on his fixing his relidence among these uncivilized nations, in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he

had

had laid afide all fuch rules of conduct as feemed to him to be contradictory to natural reason, and the public good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience. Among these, the chief was, the custom of reftraining the commerce between the fexes? and confining individuals to each other, after the defire which first brought them together had ceafed : As he faw that the ftrongest passion which governs the human heart is that defire, (toy his philosophy was not refined enough to fuggeft one thought of governing the paffions) and as the continuation of the species depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every opposition to it to be most criminal in itself, and detrimental to the public good, (properly the first object of every civil institution, and which can be promoted no way fo effectually as by promoting population) and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under fuch rettrictions only, as were evidently neceffary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the species. He gave liberty to every man to converse with as many females as he pleased, and to quit them whenever he thought proper', provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the use of it would defeat the defign; or, where it had not immediately that effect, caule confusion, and prevent both paternal care and filial duty, by the uncertainty of defcent : but the latter instance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to choose whom they liked, and if not pregnant quit them at pleasure, for others, without reproach or shame, the offspring of all which connexions were to remain with the fathers.

I fhall not fay whether reafon originally fuggefted this lyftem to him, or (as is often the care) whether he fought for reafons to fupport the dictates of inclination. Be it which it would, the effect was the fame. His fubjects increafed in an undimmon degree; and he founded, like the patriatches of old, an authority on the jutteft of all principles, voluntary confent, over a people infeparably linked to him, and to each other, by the throngett tice of VOL. III. C a nature

nature, as being, by this complicated commerce, in the strictest sense one family; for, dildaining to make laws for others, which he would not observe himself (like too many of his brother legiflators) he had enforced his precepts fo powerfully by his example, that there was fcarce a house in any of the tribes around him, from which he had not taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number. That his reception, as I observed, should be most cordial from fuch subjects is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailed him with one voice by every tender relation of nature; brother, father, fon, hufband, fhowed an affection too fublime to be expressed by formal rules, and impossible to be feen without fympathifing in it. When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and distributing among them the prefents which he had received for that purpole, gave them an account of the mighty army fent by his fovereign against the enemy, and proposed to them to affift its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence, in one who had never deceived them. They readily and fincerely affented to his propofal, and fending to invite all their neighbours to join them, feparated to make the very little preparations neceffary for perfors who were ftrangers to luxury, and knew no wants but those of nature.

#### CHAP. VII.

Chryfal defcribes bis mafter's babitation and family. He makes an uncommon progrefs. The manner in which he found the females of the boufebold engaged. Remarks on finery. Account of their anufements, with the manner in which they ufually ended. The method by which Chryfal's mafter kept peace in his family.

A S foor as my matter had thus concluded the buff, of his public character, he retired to devote a few minutes to his domeftic concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence, by the fide of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the females

28

of his prefent family; for, inftead of attempting to prevent their quitting him for other men, as inclination led them, he not only always difinified them with prefents in the most friendly manner, but also kept up an intercourse of regard with them and their fucceffive hufbands, every one of whom he attached to himfelf in the ftrongeft manner, being particularly ready, on all occasions, to do them every good office in his power. In these cottages they bred, up their children, and enjoyed from his care all the necessaries of life with more convenience and comfort than they could poffibly have experienced among their own people, unimbittered by any of those jealoufies and feuds which fuch a fituation might feem to threaten ; fo equally did he difpense his fayours among them. When he had given fome orders in his houfe, he walked out to vifit his family, and enjoy the fubliment inftance of the happiness of power, in making all who were fubject to it happy, by the unaffected tendernels with which he enquired after their welfare, and returned their careffes, on his entering every cottage.

The appearance of their females was most d fferent from the delicate femblility that fortened the beauties of Amelia, the fire which animated the charms of Olivia; † but cufform, that reconciles all things, had made them agreeable to him, efpecially as no comparison could there be made to their diladvantage, and the honeft readinels with which they met his addreffes, the warmth with which they finared his joy, amply over-balanced any imagmary defect in feature or complexion; any ignorance of those affected arts of coynels, which, over-acted, often pall the tafte for long expected pleature.

As his women did not expect his vifit fo foon, he found them engaged, according to their different inclinations, either in the management of their domeftic æconomy, or in fuch amufements as cultom had made pleafing to them. The occupations of the former kind were neceliarily confined within a narrow circle, from the circumftances of their lives; but in the latter, fancy, fole fovereign of the

See Vol. 1.--- Page 25. + Vol. 11.--- Page 219; Vol. 111, C 3,

30

feene, afferted her unbounded rule, and fported in variety of forms, many of which I foon had an opportunity of feeing. As my mafter proceeded in his patriarchal progreis, he met a confiderable number of the females of his family, with fuch of the neighbouring men, as from age or idlenels were unfit for more uleful employments, affembled together under a fpreading tree that grew before the door of one of their cottages, dreffed out in their gayeft apparel, and engaged in different kinds of divertions. At the fight of him they all arofe, and would have defifted, but he prevented them, and not only made them refume their fports, but alfo fat down himfelf in the midft of the company, to be a fpectator of them.

It feems it was a cuftom among them to meet frequently thus, at each other's cottages, for the pleature of enjoying their favourite amulements to more advantage together, and difplaying their finery, to fet off which, no art nor care was neglected on these occasions. They dreffed themfelves in their beft blankets, which were covered all over with patches of various colours, to make them look more gaudy. Their heads were adorned with plumes of feathers. Strings of glais-beads were rolled round their arms and legs. Their toes were loaded with rings of pewter and brafs; and their necks and faces were carved with figures of birds and flowers, and painted of various hues. I fee your laughter moved at this defcription; but that proceeds from narrow prejudices and want of rational reflection, on which it would appear that all ufeleis ornaments are equally just objects of ridicule, whether made of filks and laces, or party-coloured rags; whether bits of glafs, or pearls and diamonds. Think, I fay, but for a moment; and you will fee that in reality there is nothing more abfurd in wearing one kind of metal, or upon one part of the body, than another ; rings of brafs, for instance, on the toes, than golden on the fingers; in, carving the fkin, than boring the ears, or in painting the face blue and green, than white and red. The fame vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the fame effect of admiration; as, in things equally unfupported by rea-

fon,

fon, cuftom and caprice bear equal fway. The difference in the means, therefore, makes none in the end; at leaft none to the difadvantage of the perfons of whom I fpeak, as it certainly is more abfurd to lavih treafures, that might be fo much better employed, to a worthlefs purpole, while cheaper baubles would anfwer as well.

The amufements in which they were engaged, were as whimfical as their dreffes. Some fkipped about, defcribing various figures in their motions, till want of breath and wearine's obliged them to fit down. Others, and these the greatest number, were employed in chucking fhells, or pebbles from the brook, into holes dug in the fand, for prizes of bits of tin or brafs, which game they applied themfelves to with the greatest eagerneis and anxiety, and many were fo expert at it, as to ftrip their antagonists of all their hoards, often, indeed, not without the affiftance of chicanery and deceit : And a few of the eldeft, and those who had nothing to flake at play, gathered up and down into little fets, and entertained themfelves with making remarks upon the reft, not always dictated by good nature or truth ; while the miltrefs of the cottage, bufied herfelf in adjusting ceremonials, fettling her company at their feveral amufements, and ferving them with milk, or broth, and tobacco, the fatigue of which office fhe never repined at, as her confequence was eftablished by the number of her guests. Though mere amulement was the obvious end of these meetings, other objects were generally purfued, and other confequences produced by them. Intrigues were commenced, and often completed; and, trifling as the proces were for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the paffions, and fet the competitors together by the ears, till they almost clawed out each other's eyes.

Their fports were at length beginning to take their ufual turn. The tempers of the lofers became foured ; and the detection of fome deep throkes of play gave rife to altercations, which would foon have been followed by blows; but my mafter interpoled his authority, and put an end to their difputes, when the party broke up; fome returning

31

32

retiring to keep the affignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the reft to calculate their winnings, and devile fchemes for retrieving their lofles, at their next meeting; and my mafter having fingled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the reft taking offence or even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to fupply their lofs elfewhere,

I have observed your aftonishment at this whole scene, especially at my master's hardiness in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage : but what will it be, when I tell you that that number often amounted to hundreds ; and that he had never recourfe to any kind of feverity, in his conduct to them ? To comprehend this, it is neceffary for you to confider, that most of, if not not all, the uneafineffes which imbitter the life of man arife from an officious intrufion into the uneafineffes of others, or an over-weening partiality to himfelf, that mnkes him expect treatment, which he does not give, and take offence where none is meant him, for matters not worth his being offended at-an observation that will hold in every state, public and private ; among governors, as well as governed. His rule, then, was never to take part in their difputes among themfelves, nor offence at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himfelf fet the example. This difarmed them of that per-verseness, which is the fex's most offensive weapon. They remained constant to him, becaule they were not reftrained from being otherwife, whenever they pleafed; nor did they trouble him with their difputes, becaufe they faw he would not be troubled at them.

## CHAP. VIII.

Chryfal's mafter is konourably rewarded for his fervices. An unexpected meeting with one of his country women introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an old inflance of conjugal love; and refufes the civil offer of Chryfal's mafter, for a natural reafon-Chrifal changes his fervice. THE

THE very next morning his people affembled before his door, in readinefs to obey his commands, when he led them directly in quest of the enemy, sharing himfelf in all their fatigues, and teaching them to defpile danger by his example ; fo little did he know of the duty of a general. It would be tirefome to enter into a particular description of an expedition carried on among wilderneffes and deferts, and confifting chiefly of ambufcades and furprifes. It is fufficient to fay, that he was fuccefsful in all his enterprifes, reafon and prefence of mind ferving him inftead of experience in the regular art of war, and courage well fupplying the place of discipline Such services could not mils of reward from in his men. a just and judicious fovereign. His power was enlarged; and he received those marks of favour and diffinction which were originally inftituted to excite virtuous emulation, and fet the feal of honour on fucceisful merit; though, like most other human institutions, they too often produce the contrary effect, and reflect only difgrace from being bestowed contrary to their intention, and on unworthy objects.

As he was preparing the way thus for the motions of the main army, whenever the general fhould think proper to let it move, fome of his people brought before him an European lady whom they found wandering in thole unfrequented wilds, her guide having mittaken his way.

Such a fituation neceffarily entitled her to his compation and affiftance; but he foon found himfelf fill further interested in her favour, when he found the was a native of his own country, and so a family not entirely unknown to him, before he came to fix his abode in this diftant part of the world.

There is not a ftronger inftance of the force of that attachment, called in a larger fenfe patriotifm, than the in . ftinctive affection which perfons of the fame country, though utterly unecquainted before, feel for each other the moment they meet in a ftrange place. My mafter inftantly called her his dear country-woman, and embracing her with the tendernels of a brother, led her away to his own 34

own tent, which he refigned to her, as the beft accommodation he could give her; and then went and ordered every thing that had belonged to her, which his men looking upon as fair prize had taken and divided among themfelves, to be reflored, promifing to recompense the captors himfelf.

As foon as the had adjusted her appearance in fome better manner, fhe fent to defire my mafter's company, for he had told her that he flould not come without permiffion, for fear of intruding improperly upon her; and on his expreffing wonder what could have brought her thus into the midit of these deferts, so far away from every European fettlement, the gratified his curiolity with the following account, which was often interrupted by fighs, tears, and every expression of the most poignant grief; Her hufband, fhe faid, who had been an officer of diftinguifhed rank in the English forces, had fallen in one of the defeats they fuffered in the beginning of the war, before England had exerted herfelf in fuch a manner, as to entitle her to fuccels ; the news of whole death affected her fo extraordinarily, that the refolved to brave all the fatigues and dangers of fo long a voyage by fea, and journey through uninhabited deferts in time of war, for the melancholy pleature of one laft view of his dear remains, which fhe had accordingly obtained, though not fo much to her fatisfaction as fhe could have wifhed, the body being in a ftate of putrefaction, not poffible to be approached without difguft and abhorrence, nor to bediffinguifhed from any other mais of corruption, when the had caufed it to be dug out of the grave in which it had been buried, on the fpot where he had been killed, among the other victims of the day ; and was now returning home, when the had happily been found by his people. Though my mafter was as much unverfed in the regular rules of politenels, as of war, good-nature taught him the effen-, tials of one, as reafon had of the other. He heard out her flory, though not without pity and contempt at the extravagance and folly of it ; and, confoling her with fome general remarks on the error of indulging immoderate

grief

35

grief for things not to be remedied, offered to fend her under a sufficient efcort to his own habitation, where she might remain in fafety, and have the conversation and attendance of his women, till the conclusion of the campaign, when he would convey her himfelf to the next feaport, in order to her returning to her own country. Though the would have looked upon any attempt to confole her as the highest affront in another situation, her prelent circumftances made her think it not proper to fhow any refentment of it to him : befides, there was fomething in his appearance, that fomehow made it lefs difagreeable from him than it would have been from any other perfon; and would poffibly have influenced her to accept of his offer, had not the mention of his women alarmed her delicacy, and fet her virtue on its guard.

Refolving, therefore, to have this cleared up, before fhe would give any direct answer to his offer, the expressed her high fense of his kindness in the politest terms; and entering into a general conversation, among other questions of mere curiofity, alked him, in a carelels manner, whom he meant by his women, and in what capacity they ferved him ?

Such a queftion was more than he defired, though he had inconfiderately laid himfelf open to it. However, as he thought no delicacy could juffify deceit, he aufwered her directly, and without preface, that they ferved him in the natural capacity of women, while they pleafed to continue with him; nor did he defire any other fervice from them.

Though the was a good deal difconcerted at this answer, fhe had the address not to seem to understand it, in hopes that he would take the hint, and explain himfelf into a meaning leis offensive to her modefly; to give an oppor-tunity for which, 'I prefume fir,' replied fhe, 'you 'f mean that they wait upon your lady, or perform the other domestic offices of your family, in which women fervants only are employed ?'- No, really, madam,' answered he, that was not my meaning. I have no ' lady for them to wait upon ; nor do they live fo infime diately

• diately in my own family, as to have any domeffic em-• ployment in it.'-- • How, fir ! Are you not married ?' -- • Not particularly to any one perfon, madam.'--• • That's very (trange !' faid fhe, pleafed at having gained fo material a piece of intelligence, and refolving to purfue the converfation. • That is really very (trange. • And pray fir, are thefe ladies Europeans ? I fuppole,' fighing heavily and wiping her eyes, • they are the un-• happy widows of fuch officers as are fallen in the fer-• vice, to whom you have fhown the fame politenels and • humanity, as I now experience from you.'

<sup>4</sup> I am forry madam,' anfwered he, to fatisfy her curiofity at once, and put a flop to quefitions which began to be troublefome, <sup>4</sup> to be obliged to undeceive you in <sup>6</sup> an opinion fo favourable to me; they are all native <sup>6</sup> Americans, by whom I have had children; and in whofe <sup>6</sup> unfeigned affection, and eafy complying tempers, I find <sup>6</sup> fuch fatisfaction, that I never fhall quit them to attach <sup>6</sup> myfelf folely to any one woman, however fuperior to <sup>6</sup> them in the advantages of beauty and education; not, <sup>6</sup> indeed, that they want qualifications to raife both love <sup>6</sup> and efferem, which you will find when you have been <sup>6</sup> fome time among them.<sup>7</sup>

This, which was too plain for her to affect not to underifand, infiantly put an end to the pleafure fhe had begun to find in his convertation, and determined her as to his propolal. • I am much obliged to you for your civil • offer, Sir, ' faid fhe, bridling up her chin, and making him a formal curtefy, • but I cannot accept of it: I have • not the leaft define for the convertation of *Jquawn*, and • a min hafte to leave this favage place; for which reafon • I thall take it as a favour if you will fend fome of your • people to guard me to the next English fettlement, to • morrow morning. At prefent I am quite exhausted • with faigue, and want fome reft, if the diffrets of my' • heart will permit me to take any.

This thought recalled the remembrance of her los: She burft into a flood of tears, and my mafter withdrew,

after

after finding that his attempts to confole her only aggravated her grief, and gave offence to her delicacy.

Unverfed as he was in the arts of the polite world, he was too well acquainted with the ruling principles of the fex, which in every flate are the fame, not to fee through this change in her behaviour; but the diffovery had no other effect than to confirm him in his contempt for fuch hyporitical levity. Accordingly, finding fhe continued in the fame mind next morning, he made the beft provifion he could for her journey, and fent her away with a fufficient guard, forcing upon her a purfe of gold, in which I was, to defray any accidental expence, for which fhe might be unprovided, in cafe fhe fhould not directly meet a fhip, ready to carry her to Europe.

# CHAP. IX.

Chryfal's miftrefs gives fome firiking inflances of female confiftency. She is cured of her grief by a perfon of accomplifiments as extraordinesy as her own. The advantages of comparative excellence. Chryfal's miftrefs marries, and he changes his fervice for that of an old mafter.

A S foon as my miftrefs found herfelf out of the fight of my late mafter, fhe gave vent to that indignation and rage of difappointment which the had thought proper to fupprefs while in his preferce. Infentible 'brute!' faid the, ' Not quit his odious for any 'woman ! Aud to have the rudenefs to tell me to to my 'face! It thows his groß, low tafte, for which fuch ani-'hals are fitteft.'

Then paufing for fome moments: 'What a charming 'figure!' continued the, fighing forfly, 'Such a fize! 'Such firength and eale in every motion! And then the 'manly beauty in his looks! Had I butthe polithing of 'him ! I was too hafty—I fhould have waited to inh-'nuate mydelf into his heart by degrees. I could not 'have failed of fucceis. My hufband was as ftrongly at-'tached to another when firft I undertook him. Oh 'deareft, beft of men! never fhall I meetyour fellow ! 'Never thall another poffers your place in this faithful, 'wretched heart.'— A flood You, III. 38

A flood of tears here interrupted her meditations, which were often renewed in the fame ftrain during her journey, and always ended the fame way. On her arrival at the fea-port, fhe had the mortification to find that the mult wait fome time for a paffage home, all the fhips which were there having failed a few days before. But her vexation at this difappointment was confiderably lightened by the conversation of feveral companions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken fuch offence at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in those favage countries, that he had hired a fubftitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming foldiers, or converting favages. Extremes are never lafting: the violence of my mistrefs's grief had been too much for nature to support and was beginning to abate of itfelf, when my late maiter awoke another paffion, that would foon have fupplanted it ; and though he did not purfue his advantage as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and infpired a warmth ready to receive any other impreffion. As the chaplain's function and her rank, not to omit the accomplifiments of both, feemed to point them to each other as the most proper companions, it was not ftrange that they fhould foon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy fliould be infenfibly improved into a tenderer paffion. They made tête-à-tête parties, at games which no one elfe in the place knew how to play with them .-They talked of all the places of pleafurable refort in England, and of the amufements purfued at them : and they raifed their own confequence in the eyes of each other, by boafting of acquaintances with perfons they knew only by name.

Such uncommon accomplithments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, becaule their own met the fame complaifance, and found a pleafuse in being deceived by one whom it was an equal pleainre

Lui

39

fure to deceive. But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were the neareft to being to; though far from being well-bred, they knew moft of the common ceremonies in which good-breeding is by many thought to confift, (but which really are the incumbrances of it) of any perions there; and confequently appeared to enjoy thofe advantages in the higheft degree. They regulated the affemblies, they laid down the rules of play, they made fafhions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amufement and concern.

Thus cut out for each other, it was impoffible for this accomplished pair not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their respective admirers, than the joy of their rivals, the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living hufband, and the happy bridegroom pleafing himfelf with the thought, that the high accomplishments of his lady would increase his interest with his noble patrons. To crown their happineis, a few days after they were married, an English man of warput in there, inits way home, the captain of which politely offered them their paffage. Such an opportunity was not to be milled : they accepted his offer with the greateft joy, and in return made a party and entertainment for him, when he won me from my mistress at a game of brag, the only game, indeed, at which he thought himfelf a match for her.

Though I had no reafon to regyet leaving her fervice, my prefent change gave me no great pleafure, as it wanted even the recommendation of novelty, my new mafter being the captain with whom I had the laft time left the Spanifh coalt, and who had at length been made fo happy as to be ordered home.

#### CHAP. X.

Chrysfahagain arrives in England. His master is faluted by a fight not very pleasing. The history of the unfortunate hero of the day opens fome mysterious scenes. The obvious use of councils of ways are the THE Not. III, D 2

"HE arrival of my mafter in England prefented him with a scene that made him wish he had not been in fuch hafte to return. On his entering the harbour, he found the boats of all the men of war there drawn up around one fhip, in which was difplayed the dreadfulfignal of the execution of the commander. The fight appalled his foul, confcience anticipating the ftroke of juftice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate. had not time to brood over thefe gloomy reflections long, when an officer came on board him, with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains, which he obeyed, in a ftate of mind fcarce lefs unhappy than that of the criminal. As foon as the bloody work was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy in every face he met was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleafure in fuch company. When he had answered a few general questions of course, he went away to the ship of a captain of his intimate acquaintance, to learn fome account of this flocking fcene, for he had not had refolution to make an inquiry about it; nor even to attend to the conversation of every one around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my malter fignified his curiofity, which his friend pomifed to gratify over their bottle, as foon as they fhould be a-Ione after dinner. Accordingly, when the coaft was clear, . You defire information in an affair,' faid he, ' that has given our corps the despeft wound we have ever received. The circumftances are many, and mysterious ; but · I will firive to give you a notion of it in as few words. as poffible, for it can be no pleafure to either of us to. · dwell upon fuch a fubject. In the beginning of the . war, foon after you went to America, the unfortunate " man, who has this day fallen a facOfice to the humour ' of the times, was fent out with a fleet, to counteract the fchemes of the enemy, and relieve a fortrefs of our's " which they were then befieging. This was the pur-" port of his public orders; but it will appear to you prefently,

41

\* prefently, that he must have received provate ones, of a very different nature, from those who, at that time, . had the conduct of affairs. Instead of making the ex-· pedition neceffary to have carried his orders into execu-' tion with effect, he trifled away the time here in fuch a · fhameful manner, using every frivolous excuse he could devife, to delay his departure, that the voice of the pub-· lic was raifed against him; and it was found necellary to appoint another to the command in his place, in order to filence their clamours; but, unfortunately for ' him, he failed the very day before his appointed fuc-' ceffor was tochave fet out to fuperfede him. The fame " dilatory conduct threw a damp upon every thing he at-" tempted to do. He feemed refolved upon nothing ; but ' though he was invefted with the fulleft powers to act " as he faw proper himfelf, called councils of war to de-' liberate upon every the most trifling occasion, that he ' might have the fanction of their advice, to excuse his ' neglect, and often direct difobedience of his orders; for ' you well know, that a council of war always fpeaks the ' fense of the commander.

' One instance of his proceeding in this manner will be " fufficient to justify this remark. He had been ordered ' to call at another fortrefs in his way, and take from ' thence a re-enforcement for the garrifon of that which ' he was fent to celieve : On his arrival there, inflead of demanding that re-enforcement peremptorily, as his or-' ders empowered him, and making the expedition which the urgency of the occasion required, he showed fuch ' indifference to the enterprife by his delays, and expresied ' fuch diffidence of his fuccefs, that the commanding of-" ficer took the alarm ; and, following his example, called " a council of war, to confider, whether he fhould lend it, which, on mature deliberation, he abiolutely refuied, on account of the Canger of weakening his own garrilon, ' in cafe ip fhould be attacked ; whereas, it was notorious, " that could never happen, if this unhappy man did his " duty, as the force he had was fufficient to keep the con-' mand of the fea, and prevent ony fuch attempt. But, « far Vol. III. D 3

far from urging this, he quietly acquiefced in the officer's excute, and failed away without the re-enforcement, for which alone he had been ordered to ftop there. On the fame principles, when at length he came in fight of the place, the frege of which was pufhed with the greateft vigour, he excuted his fending any relief to it, on a pretence of the danger of entering the harbour, as if any military operations could be free from danger, and failed away to feek a fleet of the enemies, which was coming to affilt the free, and which he came up with fooner than he wifhed.

" An engagement now was unavoidable but, ftill he " had it in his power to prevent any effect from it, which " he notorioufly did, by triffing away his time in vain, " unneceffary manœuveres, and pretending to come to action at a diftance too great for him to do any thing. The enemy, whole interest it was to avoid an engagement, in which their most fanguine hopes could not promife them fuccels, availed themfelves of this conduct, and " made their escape, after having, from the superiority " which his keeping aloof in this manner gave them, treated very roughly a part of his fleet, that had advanced " with caution, and come really to action. This ferved him as a pretence for calling a council of war next day, by the advice of which, instead of purfuing the enemy, " who had evidently fled from him, or making any at-<sup>6</sup> tempt to relieve the fortrefs which was befieged, obvi-• oully the first object of his being fent out, he returned directly to the other, from which he was to have taken the re-enforcement, as I mentioned before, to defend " that from the danger brought upon it folely by his own " conduct, leaving the former, deprived thus of every pro-" fpect of relief, to take its fate; and giving up the ho-' nour of his country, by flying from an enemy whom he ' night have vanquished, and who had fled from him before.' CHAP.

4.2

# OF A GUINEA, CHAP XI.

Continued. Confequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary fentence attempted to be reverfed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary gerfons. The reafon of this; and why it mifcarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the bunglers, who left their poor tool in the lurch; with the confequences of this affair to a certain corps.

THE confequence of fo itrange a conduct was, the nation took fire : and with one voice demanded nation took fire ; and with one voice demanded fatisfaction for fuch a facrifice of their interest and ho-6 nour. He was, therefore, not only deprived of his com-' mand, but also fent home a prifoner ; and after fuffering every indignity and abufe which the rage of a licentious populace; broken loofe from all bounds, could fuggett, · brought to his trial, found guilty of neglecting to do all ' in his power to deftroy the enemy, and for that crime has ' this day fuffered the fentence of the law-a fentence nct ' more unexpected by him, and extraordinary in itfelf, ' than in the manner it was paffed ; and afterwards at-' tempted to be reverfed by those who had paffed it, when ' they reflected on the danger of establishing a precedent, " that might one day come home to themfelves. For, perfuaded, perhaps by their knowledge of the true motives f of his conduct, that nothing more was meant by the trial ' than to amufe the public, they refolved to act their parts in the farce, and found him guilty, as I have faid, of fuch a part only of the charge against him, as common fense could never conceive punishable with death, it be-'ing impossible to acquit him absolutely of the whole, ' without involving themfelves in his guilt, by which means they expected to fave both his life and their own credit. But fuch trimming feldom answers; the tables " were now turned ; and it was refolved to carry even this f lame fentence into execution with the utmost feverity. " Alarmed at a measure fo contrary to their expecta-

finance at the measure to contrary to that experience is and, from a provident regard to themfelves, left nothing unattempted to fave him. They retracted, as far as was in their power, their own judgment! They perturned the

43

45 the ministry! They applied to the whole body of the elegislature. They prayed ! They expostulated ! They wept ! but all was in vain. His fate was determined ; and they only drew upon themfelves that contempt which fuch inconfiftency deferved. From this general · account of his conduct it must have appeared to you, · that he acted by fecret orders, directly opposite to his · public ones, as no man, however profituted in principle, however infatuated by fear, (neither of which, it was well known, was his cafe) could otherwife poffibly have · acted in fuch a manner, the inevitable confequences of which were difgrace and death. But if any doubt fhould · remain in your mind, from the inconfiftency of a man's · actions at different times, the least attention to the fol-· lowing circumftances will effectually remove it. Repeated · informations of the enemy's defign upon that place had . been fent to those in power, for a confiderable time before; but no notice was taken of them to re-enforce the garrifon; nor even order the officers, regularly belonging to it, to attend their duty, till the fiege was actu-· ally begun; when this unfortunate man was fent, but fo · late, that the common impediments of contrary winds · might very possible have delayed him to long as to defeat the defign of his going, even had he exerted him-· felf with the greateft ardour. Had it also been really in-' tended that he fhould re-enforce the garrifon, a force \* proper for that purpose would have been fent directly from home, without fubjecting him to the further delay of ftopping for it at another place, where it might not be to be fpared, as proved to be the cafe. And, laftly, . had he not fecret reasons, which he thought fufficient to · justify his conduct, it is not to be imagined that he " would have wafted the time before he failed; that he " would have accepted the refufal of the commanding of-· ficer of the fortrefs, from which he was to have taken · the re-enforcement ; that he would not have attempted at · leaft to throw some relief into the place; and that he ' would not have fought the enemies fleet, when he had the fairest prospect of defeating it; for the tenor of his · former a

43

former life acquitted him, as I have obferved, of all luf picion of cowardice, or traiterous correspondence with
 the foes of his country.

· His conduct at and after his trial confirmed thefe re-" marks. Depending on fupport from those in power, he ' neglected the only measure prudence could have fuggefted for his defence, which was to have retorted the ' charge of his mifcarriage upon his very accufers, and · perplexed the caule with fuch a variety of matter about difobedience to fignals, and breach of difcipline, as to · blind the world, and bewilder his judges, to that they " fhould be glad to have acquitted him, if only to get rid f of the plague of the inquiry; a method which experience had shown to be effectual in as flagrant a case as his; · And, even after he was condemned, his behaviour proved, that he expected a pardon to the laft moment, for a · crime which he had committed in obedience to their 'orders. Why he did not produce those orders, in his ' vindication, must have been, that they were only verbal ones; which, in the blind luft of ministerial confi-' dence and favour, he had been weak enough to take. The reason of his being to basely deferted is too obvious. The administration of those who had employed him had been fuch a feries of blunders (not to call it by ' a feverer name !) that they had not only been fupplanted by another fet, who promifed better things, but were ' allo obliged to give him up, as a fin offering, to the rage of the people; as protecting or pardoning him would have implied a participation of his guilt : And in this light ' the other party viewed it fo ftrongly, that they exerted ' all their firength to have faved him, in hopes of being f able by his means to gain a clue, to guide them through fome of those labyrinths of iniquitous and falle policy, which they fuspected, but could not otherwise detect, ' to the entire overthrow of their rivals. This io abiolutely reverfed the whole fcene, that they who fhould have supported, now found themselves obliged to crush <sup>6</sup> him, in their own defence, which, as it was the most <sup>6</sup> popular measure, they were still able to do. <sup>6</sup> There

45

· There is but one thing more neceffary for me to add, and that is, the motive for their giving him fuch fecret orders; which, as far as reason can judge in such dark confused mysteries, must have been this: Provoked at · the repeated infults and injuffice of the French, the mie niftry here had precipitately plunged themfelves into war, without being prepared, or even determined to purfue it ; and then, like a parcel of children who have · exhausted all their strength and resolution in one spiteful affault, ftood in a ftate of ftupefaction, utterly at a lois · how to proceed, or retreat; till roufed, at length, by · the preparations and menaces of the energy, they un-· luckily blundered in their fright upon the wretched ex-· pedient of letting them take this fortrefs, that, for the · recovery of it, they might have a pretence for giving up to them those places about which the dispute began : and fo botch up a peace any way, to get rid of a war · they found themfelves unable to manage. The con-· fequence of this notable ftroke of policy was, the fpirit of the people was enflamed to fuch a degree, by this · difgrace upon their arms, that they pushed on the war with a refolution little fhort of madnels; and the fcheme, " which the minifters had fo wifely laid for their efcape, · only fealed their ruin.

This, my friend, is a fhort but juft fketch of this unfortunate affair, to which I fhall add one circumflance to
prove what I faid of his being factificed to the humour
of the times. The officer who commanded in the fortrefs which was belieged, and who in the defence of it
had betrayed a want of every qualification neceffary for
fuch an office, but courage, and had even let that be
over-ruled by the inflances of his officers, who were
tired of fatigues and dangers from which they faw no
profect of relief, to furrender it at laft, without any abfolute neceffity, was loaded with hondars of every kind,
in reward of a merit merely negative at beft ; othat is,
for not having done the very worft in his power, and
furandered it at firft, without making any defence.
I have thus gratified yeur curiofity, in the beft man-

· neto

ener in my power. If I have made any miltakes, they are not those of intention; but have proceeded from the inability of reafon to trace fuch mysterious actions ' to their real motives. One observation, though, I know ' I cannot be mistaken in, which is, that this affair has ' given a wound to our corps (as I observed before) which "it can never recover. For, after fuch an example, what officer of any rank can expect to elcape, should he neg-· lect to do his duty in the fullest manner, however ' powerful his private motives to the contrary may be ! ' For my own part, I cannot fay it yet affects me much. ' I am poor, and therefore muft pufh. If I ever have the " good luck to be otherwife, I know the confequence; and " will rather quit the fervice, than hazard being flot, as " I know muit be any man's fate, who shall hereafter be ' found to fail in the performance of his duty, from a " prudential regard to the prefervation of his life or fortune; however great that fortune, or powerful his fa-' mily. And fo, here's to you, neck or nothing is ' now the word.'

The effect which this whole account had upon my mafter may be eafily conceived. He plodged his friend, though without naming the toaft; and affenting to his remarks by a heavy figh, took his leave, without faying a word,

## CHAP. XII.

Cbryfal changes his fervice. He gets a view of a court of civil judicature, on an extraordinary occasion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimficial application of an old flory produces the frange effect of putting a counfellor out of countenance. The necessful of abfolute power in some governments with a common decision, by which nothing is decided.

I next paffed from the hands of my old mafter into the poffeffion of the purfer, who traveling through a city where a matter of great moment was under judicial determination, he waited for the event, to gratify a natural curiofity.

The affair was this: A foremaft-man in a guard-lhip, lying

48 -

lying in one of the neighbouring harbours, had by repeated mifbehaviour, in going clandeftinely on fhore, contrary to the express orders of his captain, provoked him at length to give him a dozen at the gang-way, in order to terrify others from following his example. Infleed of being reclaimed by this punifhment, the fellow perfitted to mifbehave in fuch a manner, that the captain, who was remarkably humane in his difposition, dicharged him from the fhip, to avoid the pain of punifhing him any more. This was just what the wretch wanted. Accordingly, he went directly to a profittuted, pettyfogging attorney, who had before fet him on the febrene, and employed him to fue the captain at law, for an affault, in punifhing him in the harbour, where he had no power lo to do.

In a country governed by laws, they muft regularly take their course in every instance, however flagrant in its particular circumftances. After all the preliminary delays of practice, which, grievous as they may in fome circumstances be to an individual, are yet the fafety of the public, the affair was now brought to a legal decifion. You are too well acquainted with the forms of law to require a minute account of all which were observed in this cafe. But there was one incident which I cannot pafs over. As this was a matter that importantly concerned the interest of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the guard-fhips, in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the trial, in order to inform the court, in the ufages of their fervice. One of thofe, who had never feen a court of civil judicature before, but was a man of natural good lenfe, and fome reading, having liftened to the unintelligible pleadings, and grofs exaggerations of the counfel on both fides of the queftion, elpecially those hired in the profecution, till his patience was quite exhaufted, at length arofe, and having obtained permiffion from the judge to fpeak, addreffed himfelf to the court in these words :

'I am fent here by those to whom the king has en-' trusted the conduct of his navy, to explain the nature

· and

and rules of our fervice to this court, in cafe I fee any danger of their forming a wrong judgment of it, from inexperience in a matter fo much out of their way. The little gentleman yonder has fpent fo much breath, and fhown fuch great reading on the fubject, that I imagine it is proper for me to make him fome anfwer, which I fhall do in as few words as poffible, being not half fo long winded as he. But firtt, I muft beg leave to tell him a flory, to conform to rule.

<sup>4</sup> I have red in a book (for I perceive that common <sup>4</sup> fenie fignifies nothing here, if not supported by a quo-<sup>4</sup> tation, it matters not whether to the purpole, or not!) <sup>4</sup> that a certain philosopher having declaimed one day for <sup>4</sup> a confiderable length of time before Alexander the <sup>5</sup> Great, at the head of his army, on the duties of a ge-<sup>6</sup> neral, the emperor turned about to Parmenio, one of <sup>8</sup> his generals who flood near him, and alked him what <sup>4</sup> he thought of his speech?—" Sire," answered Parmenio, " my opinion is, that I never heard a fool talk fo <sup>6</sup> karnedly."—

" I make no applications. All that I fay on this occafion is, that I am fure that gentleman has never been \* at fea; and confequently knows nothing of the fervice, on which he has been haranguing with fuch vehemence, " and elocution. He has expatiated most pathetically on the injustice of inflicting corporal punishment, without a legal trial, and condemnation; and flourished on the danger of fuch an invation of liberty. Thefe, to be fure, are fine words; but I much doubt whether they " are properly applied on this occasion. The most perfect \* form of government is allowed to be abfalute defpotifm, s as belt calculated to work its effects without delay. In \* all the communities in this world, I doubt if there is " one, where immediate obedience to the command of the " governor is fo indifpentibly necessary to the fafety of the whole, or where individuals are fo infentible to every ' other motive to obedience but fear, as in a man of war. \* I have myielf the honcur to command a fhip, in which I have five hundred men under me, the greatest part of « whom 19 YOL. III.

49

whom (I am forry to fay it) are the out-cafts of human enature, as from fome unhappy circumftances is, and · perhaps must always be, the universal cafe in our fervice. Now, as inftances daily occur, in which a moment's · delay or helitation to execute my orders, though at-· tended with the greateft difficulty, or most imminent danger, muft evidently hazard the lofs of the fhip, and every life in her; I defire that gentleman to inform me . how I am to act, should one of the men, whom I order, · fuppole to cut away a yard that is broke in the flings, · refule to go aloft, and tell me I have no right to punish · him, till he is regularly tried and found guilty ! Shall " I admit of fuch an answer, to be an example to the " reft? Or fhall I punish him with such feverity on the · fpot, by my own mere authority, as to terrify any other " from imitating him ? The answer to this plain queflion " will determine the affair under confideration. If it is faid that in the prefent cafe the fhip's being in the har-· bour makes a difference, let us fuppofe her on fire there, and the difference will vanish. In a word, if the absolute authority indifpenfibly neceffary for carrying on our fervice in fome inftances is attempted to be abridged in any, it will of courfe be at length difputed in all, and " the fervice ruined. All that can be done is to be cau-" tious not to truft it in improper hands."

This method of reafoning changed the face of the affair. The counfellor hung down his head, and flunk out of the court. The fears which had been entertained for public liberty vanified; and the jury fimply found the fact, but left the point of law to be determined by the judges; fo that after all this expence and trouble, matters remained in the fame frate of uncertainty as before, to the great joy of the lawyers.

# CHAP. XIII.

Chrysal changes his fervice, and gets into the possible of a physician and author. His master joins in a remarkable set of company. Their characters. Chrysal changes his service. Account of the enterprise on which his late master's

50

master's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they used to procure obedience to their commands.

Y master, on his arrival in London, paid me away IVI at a coffee-house, from whence I got into the poffeffion of a phyfician and author, who, having fhewn me many of the mysteries of the latter profession, proceeded to introduce me into new fcenes. Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleafing profpects they opened to him, he proceeded to figure as ufnal, in his variegated fphere. Accordingly, he defcended from his ærial citadel, and going out to visit his patients, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a fet of critics and choice Ipirits, fouls of fentiments and fire, who were going that evening upon an expedition, that was to immortalize their names. This was no lefs than to affume the modelt power of making laws that fhould affect the property of a number of their fellow fubjects; the execution of which they were refolved to enforce by the mild and equitable means which the refpectable legiflature of the mob always use to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Those who were honoured by being taken thus under. their immediate command, were the actors of plays and interludes, of which, as the works of genius, and calculated for the entertainment of the idle, they claimed the fole and absolute rule. You conclude from this, that they must have been perfons of learning, and large fortune, whole affluence gave them leifure to attend to fubjects which their education qualified them to judge of; but the contrary was the fact. They were either blanks in the creation, whom a fuperficial finattering of letters had filled with fuch an opinion of themfelves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of induftry, as beneath their dignity, though at the fame time they were barely able to fubfift without it, by all the little shifts of accoryiny; or, tradelmen, almost absolutely illiterate, who, from a prepolterous ambition of hiding an ignorance that was not any reproach to their flation, let up for the arbiters of tafte, on the firength of a fet of phrafes picked up at random, and of which they knew E'2 VOL. III.

53

not even the meaning; and neglected the bufinels by which they were to earn their bread, in order to make a flew of knowledge, that could be of no use to them.

When this illustrious fet had fufficiently conned their feveral parts, in the great enterprife which they were going to undertake, and railed their refolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the fcene of action, the theatre; and calling for a bill, I was changed by my mafter to pay his club, and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the leaders of the party, who changed me again at the door of the theatre, to pay for his admiffion. Thefe changes of my fervice, however, did not prevent my feeing the process of this extraordinary affair. On the contrary ; as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full infight into the nature and myfteries of every part of that profession. I see you defire to know my fentiments on a fubject, that has been canvafied by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curiofity is natural, and shall be gratified at a proper time : but at prefent I must not interrupt the account of this transaction. From the manner in which those felf-made legiflators had talked, when together, of every circumstance in the management of a theatre, and proteffion of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to overturn the whole prefent fyftem of the ftage, and inftitute another on principles directly opposite, according to their own ideas of perfection. But that was not the cafe, Among all theerrors and abufes, against which they declaimed with fuch vehenence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought most interesting to themfelves in particular. This was the right which rea-fon and law gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the ftage in London, before it had been brought, by much labour and expence, to fuch a degree of perfection, as to attract the attention of the public, it had been the cufform after a certain part of the representation was over, to admit performs for lefs than was

paid

53

paid at the beginning. The obvious reafon of this was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the most they could get, rather than keep the house empty. But when the paffion for feeing plays arole to its prefent height, this expedient appeared no longer neceffary, and therefore was difused ; a change which, those who conducted the entertainments of the theatre juftified, by alledging the enhanced falaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery and decorations of the stage fince the time when that cultom was introduced, which they faid required reimburfement, by a method, that could not juilly be taken offence at, as none were obliged to go, who did not approve of the terms.

Such a measure was most alarming to these men of tafte, some of whom denied themselves the pleasure of going to the beginning of the performance becaufe they were not able to pay the full price; as the others could not get from behind their counters before it was half ended; and for these good reasons both thought it the highest grievance to have a cuftom abolished, that had been to convenient to them. Accordingly, as foon as the performance began, they all arole, and without any respect to the reft of the audience, interrupted the players in the most outrageous manner, nor would defift, till the managers fhould promife to redrefs the grievance which affected them io leverely, and take half-prices, as before. This was too flagrant a violation of justice to be submitted to so fuddenly. The managers, therefore, refused ; upon which these redressers of grievances gave a loofe to their refentment, at such an instance of difbedience to their authority, and tore the house to pieces, doing more damage to the proprietors than their ownentire worldly fubstance could repair.

# CHAP. XIV.

The ruinous appearance of the scene of action supplies matter for mirth to those whose trade is to laugh at every thing. The point carried against law and reason. Inquiry into the cause of this. The rise of the prejudice against WHEN the profession of an actor. VOL. III.

E 3

HEN these men of genius and public spirit had thus gallantly accomplished their enterprise, they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their refentment, fhould their orders not be obeyed. The appearance of the houle, after this ravage, and the looks of the actors, when they ventured to creep out of their hiding holes, feemed to realife the mimic fcenes ufually exhibited there. All was havoc, defolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, fceptres, candleflicks, and broken benches were jumbled together. Sovereigns and iweepers, lords, link-boys, duchefies, and cinder-wenches joined in one common lamentation of their fate. This, however, lasted not long. Their hearts were not formed of ftuff, for grief to make a deep impression on: nor were they fo unaccustomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any milchance. Their concern, therefore, wore off with their fright; and one of them, refuming his character of turning every thing into ridicule, marched with folemn pace and rueful countenance up to the motly ruins now collected into a heap, and with fome droll variations, apt to the occasion, ipouted over them a tragic fpeech in all the emphasis and trick of woe. The humour inftantly ran through them all. Mirth grinned on every face; and they vied in cracking villanous jefts on each others undoing. But the managers had fuffered too feverely in their property to be in io merry a mood. They confulted among themfelves, and with the fages of the law, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redrefs for fuch injustice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpose. Law gave way to licentioufnefs; and they were obliged to fubmit to the most intolerable of all tyrannies, that of the mob.

You are furprifed that fuch things fhould be, in a country governed by equal and eftablished laws. In fpeculation it mult feem thrange; but the leaft acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconfittencies ftill groffer. There is fomething, however, in the circumfances of this cafe, which deterves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which fuch injuffice could proceed, When

When the fyftem of divine worfhip, which is now profeffed in these parts of the world, was first proposed to mankind, the human mind was a flave to superstitions, which were a difgrace to that portion of reafon given for its direction. By a perversion, of which man alone is capable, the celel ation of those fuperfititions, though profeffedly defigned in honour of the Deity, was attended with games, and feenical interludes, in which the groffeft immoralities received the fanction of religion, and were practifed openly as pleafing to him. This was done to attach the paffions of the multitude ; and fatisfy their curiofity with fenfible reprefentations, in order to prevent their making rational inquiries into the grounds of those fuperstitions, the principles of which were subfervient to the policy of the ruling powers. A religion inftituted on purpose to reclaim man from immoralities and superstitions, and reftore him to the dignity of his nature, neceffarily ftruck at every thing that conduced to their fupport : Accordingly the perions appointed to propagate it exerted all their endeavours against those games and interludes, both as a part of the fuperstitious worship which they wanted to abolifh, and as in themfelves fubverfive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation, heightened, and made still more alluring by every incentive art, and pomp of expence. For this purpole reason, as well as religion, fupplied ready and powerful arguments ; but, not content to wait for the flow effect of thefe, they ftrove to prejudice those whom they could not perfuade; and, to obviate the imitation of their example, raifed an abhorrence to the perfons of all concerned in fuch representations, caffing them off from the rites of religion, and declaring them unworthy both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of fociety : A method, that in one refpect defeated its own defign; as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others, from following their example. Nor did they flop here. By an error too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded from the abuje, against the

the use of the flage, and branded with the mark of reprebation all future actors, for the faults of the prefent.

55

CHAP. XV.

Continued. The common confequence of excels of zeal. The professed intent of the theatrical representations defeated by this absurd prejudice against 2.015. The vices against which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means of eremedying this, and other abufes.

**TOWEVER** the occasion might there feem to justify I this excefs of zeal, when the caufe ceafed, the effeet fhould in 'reafon have ceated alfo; and thefe general cenfures have been repealed. The fuperfitions which were the foundation of the first charge against the stage have been long abolifhed ; nor are the abfurdities and immoralities which gave offence to reafon and virtue any longer practifed there. On the contrary, the profeffed intent of theatrical reprefentations at prefent is, to infinuate instruction under the pleasing appearance of entertainment, to encourage virture by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by flowing the evils infeparably attendent on vice; to regulate the paffions, by difplaying the danger of indulging them too far, and to put folly out of countenance, by holding it up to ridicule. Now, as experience has proved the stage capable of answering these great ends, what can be more injudicious than to attempt to bring it into difrepute. What more unjust than to confign to infamy those who exert the finest powers of the human mind and body to accomplish this end in the most pleafing manner ? Yet, figh is the abfurdity of man, that while perfons of the most exalted rank and facred characters not only frequent the theatre, but also compose works to be reprefented on it, and evidently value themfelves more on poffeffing the abilities requifite to compose them, than on all their other diffinctions in life, those from whole action fuch compositions receive their force and beauty are held in diffepute, and fubject to the fevereft difadvantages only for acting them. If it is no difgrace to write a play, why fhould it be any to all it? It

is true, the confequences of this prejudice are not fo fevere here as in other countries, but ftill they are fuch as reafon is afhamed of. If actors are not *literally* excluded from the protection of the laws, they want fupport to avail themfelves of that protection, as in the cale which gave rife to their erflections! If they are not actually (for *literally they are!*) excluded from the rites of religion, they want encouragement to participate in them! I fee you are ready to object to the utility of the flage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it; and to juffify the diffepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general immorality of their conduct in private life, is if it arole folely from their profefion. But a moment's reflection would fuggeft anfwers to both thefe objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the ftage, furely the blame fhould fall on those who have a legal power to prevent fuch abufe of the institution of it ! If the actors are immoral in their lives, fhould it not be confidered that they are prejudiced from their proteffion ; and deprived of one of the strongest inducements of virtue, that is, reputation, before they are proved to be guilty of vice. The confequence of this is, that too few enter into the profession, till after they have lost their reputation, or are driven by mere necessity; by which means they reflect that difgrace upon it, which they are thought to fuffer from it; and as they are fenfible that they are precluded by this prejudice from all poffibility of recovering or preferving it by the most careful deportment, they become desperate, and proceed till they even lose the fense of unavailing shame. Whereas, if a different conduct was obferved to them ; if the brand of reputation was taken off, and the profession established in that credit which the abilities indifpenfibly neceffary to eminence in it deferve, genius would be no longer damped by apprehention of reproach : more perions of good character would not fcruple going on the ftage, as they could preferve it there; nor vice feem to receive encouragement from public favour, because from this circumstance unhappily too often entangled

58

entangled with merit ; but the life of the actor would ret flect the fentiments of the poet, and enforce them to imitation by example. Nor would it be difficult to work this important effect. All neceffary, would be, to refuse admillion on the fage to all notorious for vice of any kind; to banish from it such as should become so after, however eminent in their merits; and to fupport the profession by the civil power against the tyranny of the mob, to that the lives and properties of all concerned in it should be fecure from fuffering fuch licentious outrage and injuffice, as no other fubjects are exposed to; and as are equally a reproach and infult to good government and common fenfe. Nor need it be apprehended that this would make them infolent, or flacken their endeavours to pleafe. Their very being depends on public favour, the bare withholding of which is punishment fufficiently fevere ; as ambition to acquire it will make them exert their utmost abilities, and always obferve proper humility to the arbiters of their fate. They know that if they are neglected, they cannot live : On the contrary, it would enable them to rile to greater merit in their art, as they would no longer be under the wretched necessity of profituting their own judgement, to pleafe the groß tafte of their tyrants. Many other arguments might be alledged against this grievous, and fhameful abufe, but what I have faid is fufficient to convince candid reafon; and with prejudice it is in vain to argue.

# CHAP. XVI.

The fystem of policy by which Chrysal's master governed his state. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reason why so few new plays are acted. Inquiry into the present state of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from fucces. Managers and poets equally in fault, in their dealings with each other.

THE day after this great affair was thus equitably fettled, on the treaturer's making up his week's account, I came into the posseful of the manager, who having fome occasion for money, put me into his pocket.

The meatures of my new matter's government in this

little

little empire were the ftrongest burlesque on the policy of the world, the greatest fovereign in which had not more intrigues of state to manage, than were continually carrying on about him, from the ambition, envy, and jealoufy of the feveral candidates for his royal favour. But all this buffle did not embarrafs him in the least. He had the addrefs to play off one party against another ; and by never engaging himfelf particularly to any, was able to manage all. A method, by the bye, that might fuggefl an hint not unufeful to politicians in an higher fphere. But the part of his conduct that was most curious, and gave me the greatest pleafure, was his manner of parrying the attacks of the authors who were continually bringing him their works for reprefentation on the ftage, of which I had an opportunity of feeing many firiking inftances.

As it is evidently the interest of the manager of a theatre, to exhibit those performances, whose merit is most likely to gain the approbation of the public; and as no man who is capable of writing a piece proper for exhibition can be supposed to want judgment to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourse between them ; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the ftrongest appearances of reason. The reprefentation of a new piece neceffarily puts the manager to fome expence and much trouble. If you add to this, the natural anxiety about fuccefs, for merit is often rejected by caprice, or perfonal prejudice, you will not wonder that he fhould be cautious what he brings upon the stage ; and prefer acting old ones, unattended with these inconveniences, while the public will bear the repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reafon why fo few new pieces are performed ; and not any decline of postical genius to produce them ; it being certain that there are as many good plays written now, as at any former point of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of those times lie together before you, and raife your opinion to the happy days which produced them : But if you confider the long intervals

60

intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now loft in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not fo great reafon to complain of the prefent decline of genius, as you may have imagined. I do not, by this, mean that every one who pretends to write is poffeffed of that genius; or that all the pieces offered to the ftage are proper for reprefentation. On the contrary, many who want every qualification indifpenfible to fuccefs in fuch attempts, make them every day in defiance of reason; and strive to obtrude upon the public works which are a reproach to common fenfe. The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a lofs how to fpend his time, or wants to raife a little money, down he fits and writes a play. The confequence of this is, that the very reafons which made him turn poet neceffarily preclude him from fuccefs. Idlenefs prevents that care, that lime labor, which alone can make a performance proper for public reprefentation; and diffrefs deprefies the imagination, and hinders its rifing to that happy boldnefs, which is the effence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres from interested motives are often to blame for rejecting good pieces; poets (or those who would be thought fuch) are much oftener culpable for offering them bad ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account occasions the difficulty in their intercourfe. But in this the contest is not equal. The word of the manager is decifive; while the poet has nothing left, but to vent his refentment in unavailing (and often unjuft) complaints, and abuse, in which those who have least right are always loudeft; for enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all who prefume to find fault with it. But fevere as it must be to fuffer this, it is not the greatest difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not fatisfied with the civil refufal of affected delays and excluses, they muft have a direct answer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to support by such argumen 3

guments as muft give him pain, if he has either politenels or good-nature; though, after all, inflead of convincing them, he only gets their's and their friends illwill, and arms all their tongues againft him.

It is not to be doubted but the evaluons which managers use to thift off good pieces are as groffly offensive to moral propriety, truth, and candour, as the arguments of authors in defence of bad ones can possibly be to reafon; but as I did not happen to be witness to any inflances of them, I fhall confine my account to the letter. CHAP. XVII.

Chryfal's master fits in judgment on some pieces offered to him. A poet of fashion enters. The arguments by which he shupports his work against the objections of Chryfal's master, who makes some curious dramatical firictures. The poet, driven from his last retreat, the interest of his great friends, by the common cant of the bouse's being full for the feason, departs in a rage, denouncing their refentment, which Chryfal's master shows his reason to fear the effects of.

THE important morning after I came into the pofieffion of the manager was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the authors of which were appointed to come there for his decifive antiwer. Accordingly, as foon as he had breakfafted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for, fome time, by one of thofe afpiring geniufes, who facrifice the folid happinels of independence to the vain ambition of being well with the great ; fubmitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in public places, or an invitation to their tables ; to enhance their welcome at which, and confume time they know not how to make better ufe of, they fall upon this wife expedient of turning poet.

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite addrefs, and taken their feats with proper ceremony, the poet opened the bulinefs. • Well, fir, 'faid he, with a finile of felf-complaifance, • you have perufed that triffe: • what is your opinion ? Heh ! don't you think it will do? • Sir,' anfwered my mafter, with the fmooth fimper of Vol. III. F a courtier,

62

a courtier, ' you do it injuffice by calling it a triffe: the ' piece has a great deal of merit; and reads very prettily ' in many places; but I fear it is not quite fo proper for ' the (tage !'-- ' How, fir ! not proper for the 'tage' ' pray, fir, where does the impropriety lie? Several per-' fons of the firit rank have read it, and found no luch ' thing. His grace (aid, it abounded with the *vis co-*' *mica*. Lord Tafly was charmed with the *attic falt*; ' and Sir Gaurly admired the elegance of the diftion.--' Pray, fir, where then can the impropriety lie? They ' are allowed to be good judges.'-- ' Pardon me, fir, I ' did not prefume to call their judgment in queftion, in ' the leaft. But-a--'

<sup>6</sup> And why, then, fhould you hefitate to receive it? <sup>9</sup> They will fupport it with all their intereft.'--<sup>6</sup> That, <sup>6</sup> fir, I do not doubt. But-ftill, Sir-the town.'-

<sup>6</sup> The town, fir, ! and pray what of the town? Is the <sup>6</sup> judgment of the town to be put in competition with <sup>6</sup> theirs.<sup>--</sup> No, fir ! by no means ! but (till the town <sup>6</sup> is a very formidable and arbitrary judge ; and will not <sup>6</sup> admit its authority to be difputed in fuch matters as <sup>6</sup> this.<sup>--</sup> And, pray, good fir, what objections can the <sup>6</sup> judicious town, or you, its learned advocate, make!<sup>--</sup> <sup>-</sup> Sir, you impofe a very dilagreeable tafk upon me:

I had much rather be excufed. — I do not in the leaft doubt that, fir; but my friends infit upon a direct anfwer. Either receive the play, or fay you will not.

Sir, I fhould be very forry to give offence to any gentleman; but fince you infit upon my opinion. Do not you think, fir, the plot is too-too domel-tic? Are not the intrigues and tricks of fervants too low a fubject for polite entertainment? — How, fir! have you any objection to fervants? Do not they make a principal part in all our modern comedies? Are the *Jeremy* s, and *Serubs*, and *Pbillis*'s, and a thouland others,
to be rejected because they are fervants? —

' No, fir ! kut confider they are not the principal characters; nor does the plot turn upon them. They 'come in, as it were, by accident; and indeed, except

· in

63

<sup>4</sup> in the inftances you have mentioned, and, perhaps, a <sup>5</sup> very few more, they had much better be left out. It <sup>4</sup> thews a groffnefs of tafte to theop to them for enter-<sup>6</sup> tainment.<sup>2</sup>—<sup>6</sup> And do I not introduce the mafters and <sup>6</sup> mitheffes too, as well as the fervants? Are there not <sup>6</sup> country figuires, and town fops, and fine ladies?<sup>2</sup>—<sup>4</sup>

• Yes, fir, you do introduce them, but 'in a fubordi-• nate light ; and merely to be the dupes of their fervants, • without any bufinefs or importance of their own.'—

<sup>6</sup> And, pray, fir, in what other light do moft mafters appear  $H_{41}$  hal ha !—Well, then, it feems all your objections are to the fable. You have nothing to fay againft the fentiments and diction. <sup>3</sup>—<sup>6</sup> The fentiments, fir, may be very proper, and the diction fuited to them : but you muft be fentible that the former objection affects them all equally. The characters are too low; and the fentiments and diction confequently too coarfe. <sup>3</sup>—<sup>6</sup>

Sir—Sir—Sir—I fhall not enter into any further arguments with you. *His grace* bids me tell you, heinfifts upon your receiving it, or giving him fuch reafons as he fhall think fatisfactory, which muft be very different from thofe infignificant cavils."—' His grace need not exert his authority to influence my obedience. The leaft hint of his pleafure were fufficient; but unluckily I am engaged for the whole feation; quite full."— *Full* ! why did you not tell me fo at first?—' Becaufe you infifted on having my opinion."—' Very well, fir, I fhall let his grace, and all my friends, know how you

<sup>6</sup> have behaved. Let me have the play! impertinent, in-<sup>6</sup> folent, ignorant puppy; muttered he, as he went out. <sup>6</sup> So,' taid my mafter, as foon as he was gone, <sup>6</sup> I have <sup>9</sup> now made him my enemy for ever. As for his noble <sup>6</sup> friends, they are above troubling themfelves about any <sup>6</sup> thing of the kind, and give him leave to mention their <sup>6</sup> names only to get rid of his importunity.<sup>9</sup>

CHAP. XVIII.

Continuation. Chryfal's maßter rejests the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More NoL. III. F 2 dramatical 64

dramatical firiclures. The poet modefily infifs that his play is refufed only becaufe it wants the interest of the great; and goes off in a huff. Another poet repulsed for bis attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments against thefe laws. The poet refufes to conform to the present tasks; and makes an appeal. One more poet rejused, only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on fomething that affects more than care to own it.

THE lait poet was scarce down stairs, when a foot-I man announced the entrance of another. My mafter did not think it neceffary to obferve fo much ceremony with him, as he had done with the former, but told him directly, that he could not receive his plece. Such a fentence ftruck the poet all of an heap. He was unable to fpeak for fome moments; but recovering himfelf at length, ' Not receive it, ir,' faid he, ' you furprife me. " Pray, fir, why fo ?'-" I am very loath to find fault, fir,' anfwered my mafter, ' but you feem to be utterly unac-" quainted with all the laws of the drama."- " The laws of the drama ! they are but art ; I write from nature. " thefe laws have been long laid afide. Shakefpeare wrote " without 'laws.'- " So much the worfe. But he is a dangerous example to imitate. The local temporary · laws of the ancient drama are laid afide, it is true, but 6 not the immutable, general laws of propriety and reafon. Your fable is unconnected, improbable, and un-' affecting.'- ' How, fir, unaffecting ! Can the fall of a " mighty empire be faid to be unaffecting ?"-" No, Sir! · but the description of it most certainly may, if not drawn with judgment and force. And then your characters • are ill-fupported; and your fentiments and language • loft in the clouds.'-- • What, fir ! can the fentiments of " kings and princes be too fublime ?'- " There is a wide difference between being fublime, and fwollen out of · nature.'--

<sup>6</sup> But what objection can you make to the language? <sup>6</sup> Is it not raifed with *epithets*, and *metaphors*, and all the <sup>6</sup> figures of poetry?—<sup>6</sup> Good fir! poetical figures in <sup>6</sup> poor language look like embroidery on a blanket. They

only

'only make its poverty ridiculous. Befide, your flack-' ing in their stills, betrays you into many a stumble in " the dirt. Your figures frequently fly in the face of com-" mon fenfe, and break through every rule of grammar." "Well, fir! I shall confider of these particulars. The ' great objection I have heard made to modern plays is, their want of bufinets : but this can never be charged ' to mine. There is a ghoft, and a battle; and a king dethroned. Bufinefs enough, and enough, I am fure. -' Ghofts and battles, fir, it is true, are fometimes in-' troduced with fucceis; but then it must be a master in ' the art, elfe they have a contrary effect.'- ' I appre-. hend that the aim of tragedy is to work upon the palfions. In this, I believe, you cannot fay I have failed : " the diffrefs is truely great."-" Diffrefs, when out of ' character, lofes the appearance of reality, and becomes ridiculous. A king in an alms-house, and a queen begging from door to door, are images which fink into ' a burlefque.'- ' It is very well, fir ! you may fay what ' you pleafe, but I am fatisfied it is not want of merit ' in my play that makes you refuse it. You daily act ' much worfe. If it had been recommended to you by fome lord, you would have found none of these faults; but merit may flarve without intereft to support it, now-" a-days. This is fine encouragement to genius, truely; " and the public is like to be well entertained while fuch " men have it in their power to refuse every thing that ' does not happen to pleafe themfelves.'

Saying this, he fnatched up his play, leaving my matter to pleale himfelf with the project of being criticiled upon in a news-paper, and pulled to pieces in a feurrilous pamphlet. He had not time to indulge thefe reflections long, when another of his clients attended his levee. As foon as he was feated, 'I have read over your work with great care,' faid my mafter, and am forry to fay, 'I think it improper for the frage.'— 'Pray, fir, why 'fo?' anjwered the poet with an air of importance. 'It 'is written firifely according to the rules of the drama a: 'and enriched with the fubliment forthematics of the anci-VQL. HIL- F 3' cuts'

65

66

ents.'- Sir, I am fenfible of its merits as well as of the great learning of the author : but the tafte of the · times requires entertainment of a different kind,'-Surely, compliance with a vitiated tafte will not juffify the-breach of rules, taken originally from nature, and
 eftablished for so many ages. — I neither dispute the · original justice, nor the antiquity of them : but I ap-· prehend that the latter, in a great measure, destroys the · prelent force of the former. The cuftoms of mankind, the part of nature which comes within the province of · the drama, are fo changed fince the establishment of · those rules, that it would be most abfurd to exact obedience to them now. Befide, may it not be faid, without violation to the respect due to antiquity, that experience, in a great length of time, may have made many ' improvements in those rules. The infancy of every art ' is weak.'- ' But whatever changes may have happened ' in the cultoms of the world, truth still remains the fame, ' and the genuine fentiments of nature can not difpleafe.' - Very true ! but ftill they may not always be received ' with equal pleafure in the fame garb. Unimpaffioned fentiment, however just and fublime, works not the ef-· fects defigned by the drama, whole aim is to convey ' instruction and pleasure at the fame time by an imme-' diate address to the paffions."- ' Is it poffible, that ' you can be an advocate for the irregular monfters, which " at prefent difhonour the ftage ?"-" As for irregularity, Though · I look upon it to be but an imaginary defect. ' even if it were otherwife, I am the fervant of the pub-· lic, and obliged to find entertainment for their tafte, be 'it what it will. If you would but conform'-' No, fir! that I never will, against reason and the ancients. ' I fee you are prejudiced, and, therefore, I fhall not ' argue with you any longer. But I shall not acquiesce ' in filence. I will publish the performance, without being difcouraged by your refufal, and appeal to the 'judgment of the learned.' He then marched off, with a trately pace, and my mafter looking after him, ' There " zgain,' faid he, fhrugging his fhoulders, " I shall now · have

67

• have the ghofts of Sophocles and Ariftotle, and all the • doughty ancients, raifed to haunt me.'

As he faid this, a perfon entered, whole whole appearance spoke distrefs. He approached my master, bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he fpoke : ' I ' have made bold to wait upon you, 'fir,' faid he, ' but if ' you are not at leifure, will call another time '-' Pray ' fir fit down,' replied my mafter, with a finile of encouragement, ' I have looked over your work, and am concerned that it is not in my power to receive it; as L ' fhould be fincerely glad to ferve you. But in this it is ' not poffible. I must be plain with you :- You feem to ' want every poetical talent.'- ' I thought, fir,' returned the poet, fcarce able to collect fpirits enough to fpeak to him, ' that the bufinels of tragedy was to work upon the ' paffions ! I depended entirely on the diffrefs.'- ' Very ' true, fir ! but there are other paffions befides pity to be applied to; nor is poverty a proper diffreis to work ' upon them. Severe as it is to be felt, it affects but ' little in representation. The upper ranks of life know " not what it is; and those who do are defirous to keep ' the thought at a diftance, and conceal a knowledge they ' are ashamed of. The mind must be properly prepared ' to feel for another. The description of a famine would ' affect but little after a feast.'

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burft into tears, and was departing without being able to make a reply. My mafter felt his diffrefs; though he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumftances, nor give up an evening's entertainment to relieve an author's indigence; and waiting on him to the door, flipped a couple of guineas into his hand; when it felt to my lot to change my fervice. I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart fo ftrongly as on this occation. The poet kiffed the hand of Ais benefactor in a rapture too big for utterance, and forgetting for a moment all his diffrefles, went to a coffice-houfe and changed me to pay for his breakfaft. CHAP. 68

Chryfal changes his fervice. His mafter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary fociety. Some reflections not fuited to the tafte of the times. Rife of this fociety. A defeription of a monaftery, with an account of its members, and fome of its rules.

ON the fame day that I entered into the fervice of the mafter of the coffee houle, he paid me away in cafhing a bill for a man of fa/hion, who, the next morning, fet out upon a party of pleafure of a most extraordinary nature. This was, to be admitted into a fociety, formed of a number of perfons of the first definition, in burlefque imitation of religious focieties, which are infituted in other countries.

I have already told you that I fhall not give any opinion in religious matters. But, whether the original infitution of fuch focieties was right or not, as the motive of them was the worfhip of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule moft certainly mult be wrong; the mind of man feldom being acute or attentive enough to diftinguifh between matters which to appearance are fo intimately connected as the mode of worfhip, and the object of it; but generally involving either in the diffegard affecting the other. In the prefent inflance, indeed, the differgard was defignedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the feene in which my mafter was going to act a capital part, it is neceffary to trace the whole from the original. A perfon of a flighty imaginatior, and who policified a fortune that enabled him to purfue those flights, cloyed with common pleafures, and ambitious of diffinguithing himfelf among his companions, had refolved to try if he could not ftrike out fomething new, that fhould at the fame time pleafe his own tafte, and do honour to his genius. The mere gratifications of fenie, in their utmost extent, not answering his defign, he had recourfe to the allistance of imagination to enhance them. The great butt, againft which men of pleafure play off all their wit, is religion. Their reasons for a practice fo grois are obvious. As the voice

0

60

of conficience will fometimes intrude upon them fo as to pall their higheft pleafures in the very moment of enjoyment, their firft endeavour is to filence it, which they find by experience, cannot be done fo effectually by any other method as by this of taking off the refect paid to religion, from which conficience borrows the terrors that make its admonitions fo unwelcome. Befides, they think it flews their fuperiority over the reft of mankind, to laugh at what they are afraid of; as it is alfo convenient for their character of wit, to exert it on topics where it is fafe from being rivalled by men of real underftanding.

These weighty confiderations determined him to feafon his foheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it the better relified. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of fuch moment, he at length hit upon a plan that pleafed him.

In the middle of a large lake upon his effate, there was an ifland, the natural beauties of whofe fituation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this ifland he crected a building, exactly on the model of the monalteries which he had leen in other countries; and, to make the refemblance complete, there was not a vice that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of them, for practifing which he did not make provision in his. The cellars were flored with the choiceft wines; the larders with the delicacies of every climate; and the cells were fitted up for all the purpofes of lafcivioufnefs, for which proper objects were also provided. Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itfelf, may feem to have been defigned only against those focieties of human institution : but it was beneath his genius and spirit to ftop here. Nothing lefs would fatisfy him than to attack the very effentials of the religion eftablished by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every ferious perfon in it to be divine. For this pious purpole, when every thing was prepared for their reception, his next care was to find a fraternity proper for the place. But in this his rankoand courfe of life made him not long at a lofs. He felected from among his intimates a number equal to that of those who had been at the first chosen to inculcate the religion

70

religion which he defigned to ridicule, whole names they affumed, as he with equal modefty and piety did that of the divine author of it : and, to fupply any decreale in this number by death or defertion from the terrors of reflection, he inftituted an inferior order of as many more chosen also with the greatest caution and regard to the latitude of their principles, their fortunes, and mithfulaccomplifhments. The probationary office of thefe latter was to attend upon their fuperiors in the celebration of their mylteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monastery, where no other fervants were ever permitted to enter, on the most common occasion, as the very decorations of it would, in a great measure, have betrayed their fecrets : the ceiling being covered with emblems and devices too grofs to require explanation to the meaneft capacity ; and the walls painted with the portraits of those whole names and characters they affumed, represented in attitudes and actions horrible to imagination. Nor was their care to keep their mysteries impenetrably fecret confined to this exclusion of common fervants. The diffidence of confcious guilt made them even diffruft each other, till bound to fecrefy by oaths and imprecations, receiving their force from the religion thus abufed by them : an abfurdity common among men affociated for the most flagitious purposes. But, strong as the power of fuperfition is over weak and wicked minds (for nothing but the groffed fuperftition could make them think oaths in fuch circumstances binding 1) their fecrely was fecured by a still stronger motive, which was fear. They were fenfible that even fufpicion of fuch vices would for ever exclude them from the fociety of all those, whom, in defpite of themfelves, they could not help holding in repect ; and that fo outrageous an infult upon the laws was liable to punifhment from the fecular power, though they might by their intereft evade the direct effects of which, yet the imputation would make them fo obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the flate, if their re-fentment did not arife still higher, and make them take

that punifhment into their own hands! and thefe fears prevented their fecrets being divulged even by fuch as had refolution enough to defert the fociety; as they imagined the frain could never be fo effectually expunged, as to fecure them from those confequences.

The rites of this fociety, and the ceremonies obferved upon the admiffion into it, will be beft explained by the account of what I faw my mafter perform on this occafion; when he was candidate for the higher order, having already ferved his noviciate in the lower.

# CHAP. XX.

Chryfal's mafter arrives at the monaftery. The manner of his being admitted into the fociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the fociety's injuffice in preferring Chryfal's mafter to hum. The mirth of the company difturbed by the entrance of the devil, juft as he was invoked by Chryfal's mafter. The effect of fuch a wifter upon the company. The devil fixes upon Chryfal's mafter in particular, and makes him fqueak.

I was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my mafter arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no fooner made the concerted fignal, than a boat was fent to ferry him over. On his landing on the ifland, he went to the monastery, where he found the fociety just fitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a fhort meal, and drank their spirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their respective cells, to prepare for the folemnity they were going to celebrate. My mafter, then clad in a milk white robe of the finelt linen, that flowed loofely round him, repaired, at the tolling of the bell, to the chapel, the fcene of all their myiterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him, to the found of foft and folemn mufic. On his entrance he made a most profound obeilance. and advancing flowly towards a table that flood against the wall in the upper end of the chapel, as foon as he came to the rails, by which it was furrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profession of his principles nearly in the words, but with the most gross perversion

72

of the fenfe of the articles of faith of the religion effablifhed in the country, demanded admiffion within the rails, the peculiar flation of the upper order, where the fuperior and eleven of the fraternity (the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up) flood arrayed in the habits of those whole names and characters they profand by their affumption.

When he had finished, another candidate advanced in the like manner, and making his profefion, also preferred the fame claim; as there were more who had a right to do, but, difcouraged by the fuperior merit of the two, they had declined their pretentions for this time.

The brotherhood, baving heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling around it, the fuperior repeated a prayer, in the fame strain and manner with the profession of the candidates, to the Being whom they ferved, to direct their choice to him of the two most worthy of his fervice. The superior then proceeded to take the fuffrages of the reft, with the fame mimic folemnity ; when my master being found to have the majority, his election was exultingly attributed to. immediate infpiration, and he was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received the name and character which he was to bear in the fociety, in a manner not proper to be defcribed, every the most facred rite and ceremony of religion being profaned, all the prayers and hymns of praife appointed for the worthip of the Deity burlesqued by a perversion to the horrid occasion. In this manner the evening was wafted till fupper-time, when they fat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occafion, at which nothing that the most refined luxury, the most lascivious imagination could suggest to kindle loofedefire, and provoke and gratify appetite, was wanting, both the fuperiors and interiors (who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as foon as they had ferved in the banquet) vying with each other in foofe fongs, and differtations of fuch grols lewdnefs and daring impiety, as defpair may be fuppoled to d. ctate to the damned. in both which my maker fhone s fo

133

many other things equally grofs and flocking in fpeculation. Marriage is a mutual truft of honour. A man's marrying a woman, therefore, who has loft her honour, is trufting his whole fortune to a bankrupt; who has no fecurity to give for that truft ; a fool-hardinefs that muft proceed either from a confcioufnels of having himfelf no honour to lofe, a total difregard to the lois, or an affectation of acting on different principles from the reft of mankind, as a proof of being above their prejudices. Where her honour indeed has been loft to himfelf, juffice makes it a duty upon him to repair her lofs by marriage; but then that very marriage is a punifhment for his crime, as it must want the effential happiness of confidence; for he will be always ready to fufpect, that the disposition which betrayed her into error with him may have the fame effect with others. Nor is this fulpicion unnatural. I fee you would argue from the habitual, avowed incontinence of man, that this truft of honour is not equal, and therefore cannot be obliging. But this is judging without duly confidering the fubject. Chaftity is, in its nature, a virtue equally the duty of both fexes to obferve, and, with regard to fociety in general, the violation of it is equally criminal in both; but in those nearer connections of life, the intereft of which is the more immediate object of human attention, the confequences of that violation in woman are attended with fo much greater inconveniences than in man, that, in respect to them, the crime is obvioufly lefs pardonable in her than in him; and, for this reason, this virtue of chastity is made, in a peculiar manner, the honour of woman; while the honour of man is placed in other virtues, from which the receives as much advantage, as he does from her chaftity; and, therefore, the truft of honour is mutual and equal .- In diffinguifhing thus between honour and virtue, I fpeak according to the notions of mankind; in their own nature, there is no diffinction between them.

There was fomething in the whole appearance of the perion to whom my miltrefs paid me away, that made me expect to the a character of a caft which I had not yet YOL, III, M?

134

met with among mankind. His looks were fly, methodical, and plodding. Practice had fixed upon his paffive face the hollow varnish of a servile smile ; and an over-acted affectation of polite behaviour made his natural awkwardness truely ridiculous. But under all this, I could fee a depth of defign, and latitude of principle, equal to any great attempt, the fuccefs of which should in the opinion of the world determine the quality of that greatnefs, whether villainy or virtue. That knowledge of his life which is neceffary to explain his character, and account for the principles upon which he acted confiftently his manifold part, will be comprised in a few words. Sprung from the dregs of the people, and turned loofe upon the world to fhift for himfelf, as foon as he was able to crawl, he took his fland about the house of a perfon in bufinefs, where he hardly earned a morfel of broken victuals, by running of errands, cleaning fhoes, and fuch offices as are performed by those fervants of fervants.

I fee you wonder at my faying he was forung from the dregs of the people, as if difference of rank could make any alteration in the effential equality of human nature; but without entering into a difcuffion of undetermined points, on both fides of which much has been faid with equal ftrength of reason, the belt observation of the power of early example, to impress those principles which are to govern the future life, will fufficiently justify my using the expression here. The patience with which he was obliged to bear the cuffs and kicks of those worft of tyrants, who always wantonly revenge tenfold upon their wretched underlings whatever they fuffer themfelves, taught him that hypocrify, and abject fubmiffion to every thing that might any way ferve his convenience, which afterwards proved the ground work of his fortune ; as the example of his parents, who got their living by retailing to the poor the meaneft neceffaries of life, initiated him to early into every fpecies of low fraud and chicane, that they became ablolutely natural to him, and invariably ruled the conduct of his life.

He had been fome time in this hopeful courfe of educa-

tion

135

tion, when an accident opened him an opportunity of showing what a progress he had made in it. A brother of the perfon, about whole house he picked up the fcraps that kept him alive, happening to fee one of the fervants beating him unmercifully, interfered from mere humanity, and faved him. The marks he bore of his beating raifed a curiofity to know how he had deferved it; when he gave fo feemingly innocent and pitiable an account of himfelf, and attributed the fervant's cruelty fo artfully to his having refused to do fomething for him, which was improper for him to do, that the young gentleman believed him, and taking compassion on his distress, admitted him into the family, to wait upon himfelf, by which he was delivered from his dependance on the other fervants, and protected from their future infults. The humility with which he behaved himfelf, in this first step of his advancement, his affiduity and feening attachment to his mafter foon won his good opinion fo far, that he difpenfed with his attendance, and fent him to fchool, where he applied himielf fo clofely, and made fuch a proficiency, that his master took him into his own bufinels, in which his fobriety, diligence, and obedient temper gained his confidence fo entirely, that, as foon as ever he thought/him, capable, he admitted him into fellowship with himself, and abfolutely refigned the management of his whole bufinefs to him. It may naturally be fuppofed, that he did not neglect to improve fuch an opportunity of practifing the leftons he had learned in his youth. He fecreted the profits of all the bufinefs, which his principal was not indifpenfibly obliged to be perfonally engaged in ; he fupplanted him with fuch as he could of his cuftomers; he cheated of confiderable fums of money fuch others, as long experience of his (the principal's) honefty had put off their guard with him ; and took every occasion of infinuating to the world, under the most effectual difguise of friendly concern and complaint, his negligence and incapacity ] at the same time, that he profeded to himself the most implicit respect and obedience, and seemed ambitious of fhowing his gratitude and attachment, by performing the Vot. III. NN 2

138

in cafe of death, had the first claim, from law and nature, to his fortune. In carrying on this icheme, they played into each others hands with fuch addrefs at his return, that, when he was going to the next *campaign*, he made a will, by which he gave, not only his own large acquifitions, but also the inheritance of his anceftors, between them, in fuch a manner as plainly flowed a wrong mind, and fupported his bequeft with luch reafons, as were an infult to the laws and religion of his country; at the fame time, that they perpetuated the infamy of thole, to whom it was made, by arguing expressly in favour of the vices which had gained them this mark of his regard; and this will, the fubfrance of which faitsfied them for the circumftances, he left in the hands of my mafter.

In this fituation matters flood between the three, when I came into his poffeffion. When he had finished the drudgery of the day, he went as usually to spend There was his evening agreeably with his charge. one fpecies of what is called wit, upon his expertnefs in which my mafter valued himfelf not a little. This was telling a fictitious flory with fo grave a face, and corroborating it with fuch plaufible circumstances as to raife the hearer's anxiety, and then to laugh at the eafy faith that could be fo taken in. Low as the merit of fuch wit was, at the beft, in him it had none at all. His fictions were no better than down right lies, deftitute of imagination or humour, and corroborated with nothing but new-coined oaths, and imprecations, fit to afford entertainment only to the damned. With an effay of this kind he refolved to entertain his mistrefs this evening. Exerting, therefore, all his command of countenance, ' my " dearest love,' faid he, with a melancholy look, and deepdrawn figh, as he entered the room, ' I have received bad " news, blast my eyes ! there has been a battle, in which ' our fool'--- ' Has not been killed !' interrupted the, fnatching the word out of his mouth, that is bad news, " indeed; but onother battle may afford bettere ----

I fee you were firuck with horror at my repeating the impregation he made use of on this occasion. Instead, therefore,

139

therefore, of intermixing them with every period of his discourse, as he always does, I will in their place make a paule thus, \_\_\_\_\_, which will ferve as well, for he ules them, in general, as no more than mere expletives. ' No !' anfwered he, fhrugging up his fhoulders, ' that chance is loft for ever -----. He has received a ' wound ------, which, without endangering his life, ' has difabled him from further fervice, fo that we shall ' be bleft with his company -----, for the reft of our ' lives.'- ' Curfed, you fhould fay! but is there no way ' to be thought of to prevent it? Could not proper ap-" plication be made to the furgeons?"-" All is too late! " his leg was taken off directly -----; and the danger " entirely over, when the account came away; as you " may fee by his letter, in which he writes me word, -----' that he hopes to be at home with us, in a month, to · leave us no more. Eh ! what have I done with his " letter ? It should be in this pocket ! I certainly have · left it behind me in my confusion. But you will fee it foon enough. He fends his love to you; and bids me " tell you, he would have wrote to you, but was pre-' vented by company, fo that you fee he cannot be in any danger -----. But he'll make you amends. I fee ' how every thing will be \_\_\_\_\_. He'll marry you, as foon as he returns \_\_\_\_; that he may introduce you " into his family, who will treat you with forced civility, ' in order to get him into their hands again. I fee very " well ----------- how every thing will happen.'-- ' No ! "that shall never happen! I hate them, and despile their civility. I had rather bear the fneers and infults "of the world than that. Nor will I marry him, let " what will be my fate! his infolent, capricious humour ' is fcarce to be borne now ; though he curbs it, becaule I am at liberty to leave him. What would it then be, were I to be his flave for life ? I had rather feign penitence, and throw myfelf on the compation of my own family, othan plunge into fuch milery o Marriage on any terms is a ftate I despife, but with him I abjure it." This paffion was fuch a triumph to my matter, that

140

he could keep his countenance no longer. 'Ha! ha! " ha! a fair humbug, damn me!' faid he, burfting out into a horfe-laugh, 'your humble fervant, madam! I thought you could not be taken in. Ha! ha! ha! a fair humbug, ' damn me." - ' Taken in!' faid fhe, vexed at being played upon, but more pleafed that it was no worfe, how can you take delight in fuch a low-lived trick? If " I could not fhow my wit in a better manner, I am fure " I would give up all pretentions to it."-" All poor fpite and malice! But don't fret for it. Come! we'll kils · and be friends, and think no more of the matter! only remember not to brag another time that you cannot be " taken in, though, ha! ha! ha!'

Every thing being thus made up, their conversation for the reft of the evening was fuch as may be fuppoled between perfons of their caft, and in their fituation. They gloried in the fuccels of their fchemes upon their common dupe, the colonel; they formed plans for fpending his fortune, fhould any lucky accident put an end to his life; they ridiculed the pride and felf fufficiency of which they had taken advantage; and concluded in their ufual way, with proving, in each other's arms, the justness of his confidence in their fidelity.

#### CHAP. XXXVIII.

Chryfal's master receives an account of the death of the colonel. He finds after much deliberation that he cannot fling his worthy affociate out of the whole spoil, and therefore prudently refolves to share it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his fuil, and the strives to evade it, by arguments confistent with both their characters. He carries his point in a particular manner.

DUT all this harmony was foon diffurbed for ever, by I the accomplifhment of the very schemes it was founded on, which was much nearer than they imagined. The first news my master received on his return home next morning, was that the colonel had been killed in a This was an interefting event ; he directly late battle. locked himfelf up in his closet, and taking out the will, though

IAI

though he had often read it before, ftudied every fyllable of it over and over, to try if there was any poffibility for him to fing his own and the colonel's common miltrefs, and get the whole fortune himielf; but he had the mortification to find that this exceeded all his fagacity, and that the whole will muft ftand or fall together.

After some, not the most pleasing, meditation, therefore, ' And fo !' faid he, biting his nether lip, and turning up his eyes, with an execration too horrid to be repeated, ' I have been labouring all this while to get a fortune for this brimftone ! A very pretty reward, " truly, for fupplanting my best benefactor! it were bet-' ter for me, that even he had it, than fhe; for then I " might not only enjoy my fhare of it as it goes, along " with him; but alfo very probably cheat him out of the ' most of it, in the end. What, though I am to have 'it after her death, may not the live as long as I! Befide I have made away with the greatest part of the ' money, and fo am liable to be blown up and undone, " whenever the thinks proper to call it in; for I know " too much of her, to expect that the thould thow favour to any one, when once in her power. No! that shall " never be ! I have it in my power to fet afide the whole ' unnatural, nonfenfical will, and I will do it, if the re-· fules to come into terms with me. Such a facrifice of " my own intereft to gratitude and honefty, as this will appear, will gain me fo great reputation, that I shall " make a better fortune myfelf in a little time; and as to ' what I have embezzled, I know by experience that I ' can fink that upon my wife principal at a proper time, " as I have done more before now ; to that after all I may find honefty to be the best policy, as the faying is. "Well! be that as it will, I am refolved to be honeft to myfelf first, and do that which shall ferve my own ' interest best, without regard to proverb or opinion. 'Let me confider, then I Suppose I marry her; and fo get possellion of all at once. But the devil of it is, that I must take her into the bargain; and I know her too well for that, if I could help it. She may molt · likely 7

142

• likely ferve me the fame-trick with fomebody elfe, that • fhe has ferved this fool with me: once a whore and al-• ways a whore. However, I mult take my chance for • that. Comming as fhe is, fhe fhall not cuckold me • eafily. If I amnot a match for her fhe mult be able to • outwit the devil himfelf; fo, happy come lucky, I'll • e'en venture.'

Having reafoned himfelf into this prudent refolution, he would lofg no time; but went to her directly to carry it into execution. As foon as he met her, 'I have brought 'you news now,' fâid he, 'in earneft. News that willbe 'either good, or bad, according as you take it.'-'P'haw!' anfwered fhe, flightly, 'this is more of your auit, I fup-'pofe. But for heaven's fake leave off making a fool of 'yourfelf, and teazing me. I am quite fick of fuch ftuff.' Strike me to the centre,' replied he, paffionately, 'but I 'am ferious. I have this moment received an account, 's that the colonel is actually dead. He was killed in the 'late battle.'

The look with which he faid this had more weight with her than all the oaths and imprecations he could utter, for, much as he was mafter of his countenance, he could not conceal the agitation of his mind. " Dead !' interrupted fhe, cagerly, ' thank heaven ! then all my fears " are over." ' Aye !' replied he, dryly, ' but it is well ' if your hopes are not also over with them !' ' How! "What do you mean? Has he not made a will, by which ' all his fortune comes directly to me ? For heaven's fake " do not torture me in this manner. Yes! he has made a will, it is true. But don't you know that the laft · letter I received from him revoked it, fo that every thing " goes now to his family, for he lived not long enough to ' make another, after he received his wound; though " that is no great loss to you, for, from what he faid " when he was dying, it would not have been much in 'your favour. But, did you not promise me, that you " would suppress that revocation, in case anything of this 'kind fhould happen; which you faid you had it in your power to do, as your principal was fool enough to prof.mile

<sup>6</sup> mife you, that he would never open any letters that <sup>6</sup> fhould come directed to you from the army, as he had <sup>6</sup> a right to do, by which means it had luckily efcaped <sup>6</sup> coming to his knowledge.<sup>7</sup>

· Perhaps I may have faid fo ! But, do you think I " have no more conficience than to conceal fuch a thing; and rob a man to whom I am under to great obliga-" tions ?'-- ' Confcience ! For heaven's fake, I conjure you again, do not torture me any longer. Speak of confeience to those who do not know you. I have had fuffi-" cient proof, that your interest is your conscience; and this will furely determine you to ferve me, as you ferve ' yourfelf at the fame time. Is not all to come to you at " my death?'-- 'But what am I to do in the mean while? " Come, then, as you fay you know me fo well, I'll offer ' you a fair proposal, that shall make it my prejent interest " (for that is what I regard) to ferve you; and your fu-" ture interest, on which you lay fo great a stress, to ferve \* me. Suppose we join our interests in all things, and ' marry. By this expedient I shall come directly into the enjoyment of the fortune; and your children will in-" herit it.'

'Marry!' exclaimed fhe, flarting in furprife, 'what 'could put fuch a ftrange thought into your head, who 'know my fentiments on that unnatural flate of fuperfittion and flavery? No! that, of all things, I can ne-'ver come into. But, I fee you are at your bumbugging 'again. The profeffions, and oaths of friendfhip, you 'have fo often made me.'-

<sup>6</sup> Were all but wind, 'anfwered he, <sup>6</sup> and have left no <sup>6</sup> trace behind them. 'But this kind of talking anfwers <sup>8</sup> no end. The whole depends on the one word by which <sup>6</sup> you anfwer me this fhort queftion—<sup>6</sup> Will you marry <sup>8</sup> me? Or will you not?' If you confent, I will fe-<sup>4</sup> crete the papers that fet afide the will, and fo we fhall <sup>6</sup> fhare the fortune between us. If you refue, I will give <sup>6</sup> them up to his family, who will directly deteat your <sup>6</sup> claim, and then you may follow for your living that li-<sup>6</sup> bertine way of life you appear fo fond of; for I have

" no notion of damning my character in this world, and " my foul in the next, to ferve any other but myfelf .-

. Confider, therefore, before you ipeak, as I will go di-

" rectly from you to them, if you refuse me."

144

Such a menace avas not ineffectual to one who knew him fo well. ' Will nothing elle fatisfy you ?' replied fhe, burfting into tears. ' No part of the fortune; and to continue as we are at prefent, man and wife in every 6 thing but the curfed ceremony ?'- ' No, that ceremony ' is every thing I want, and nothing elfe; becaufe that only can give me a right to your fortune; for, as to ' your perfon, I would not have you think I fet any va-· lue on that, I have long fince had enough of it: and for fharing the fortune, I am refolved I will have all, ' or none; and this is the reafon why I make you fuch an offer ; for, otherwife, I affure you I hate marriage ' as much as you po&bly can. So let me have your an-" fwer directly, for I will not trifle thus a moment longer.'-The manner in which he faid this left her no room to doubt his refolution. ' Well then,' replied the, "fighing, "if you will have it fo, it must be to; and I ' confent, becaufe I cannot help it. But when is this ' bleffed marriage to be folemnized ?'- ' As for that, I am in no more hurry than you. All I defire is, that ' you will directly fign a promife of marriage, whenever " I think proper to call upon you. I'll go this inftant, ' and draw it up; and leave you to confider how much better this is for us both, than to have difagreed, and ' let all go to his family.' He waited not for a reply; nor was long before he returned with the deed, which he figned with evident reluctance.

## CHAP, XXXIX.

Account of the methods which Chryfal's mafter took 10 obviate the effects of his principal's refentment, with the characteristic conversation that passed between them, on the former's avowing the colonel's will. Chryfal's mafter overshoons bis mark, and provokes his principal to do more than be ever intended. An uncommon inflance of the justice of the world, Chryfal's master obliges the alady

145

lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries her. The confequences of fuch a marriage, and fruits of the fuccess of all their schemes.

HIS point being fettled, the next thing was to produce the colonel's will, the thought of doing which gave him fome alarm, in fpite of all his fortitude, as it would be throwing off the mark he had worn all his life, and declaring war with his principal, who he judged from himfelf would not fail to publish to the world the meannefs of his original, and the mifery from which his compaffion had raifed him. But fuch thoughts, difagreeable as they might be, could not divert him from his purpofe. To dilable his principal, though, as far as poffible from carrying his refentment any farther than words, he ranfacked all his papers, and took away not only fuch as related immediately to the private transactions between themfelves but also those of other people, with whom they had been concerned in bufinefs, in order to diffrefs his circumstances, and involve him in fuch perplexities as should lay him under a neceffity of keeping fair with him. But this precaution, like many others dictated by the fame fpirit, occafioned the very thing it was defigned to prevent.

The first news of this affair was like a thunder-clap to the family of the colonel. My mafter's principal, who, though, in the course of law and nature, had the first expectations, as I have faid before, could not believe it to be true, fo high was his confidence in the honefty and attachment of my master. To fatisfy, however, the importunities of his family, he came to him, and with a look of indignation at the baseness of such a report, rather than apprehenfion of the truth of it, 'I am come,' faid he, ' to tell you a piece of news, I have just this mo-" ment heard, which is, that the colonel has left his whole fortune between that jade, his miftrefs, and you; and " that you were privy to his will, which he left in your hands when he was going abroad. But the latter part " of the ftory makes me easy about the reft; for, whatever his capricious temper might lead him to do, I am WOL. III.

. 146

 convinced you would have no hand in fo bafe an affair,
 nor even conceal his having fuch an intention from me a
 moment. I fee you are fhocked at the fcandalous imputation; but do not think I mention it as if I believed
 it. I could not do gou fo much wrong.

The first imprefiions of youth can never be totally effaced. Though my mafter could lay fchemes to cheat his principal, and revile him behind his back, he had learned to look at him with an awe, when a beggar about his brother's houle, and afterwards his fervant, that he could never after get over, when in his prefence. This awe, added to the confution of confcious guilt, madehim mable to make any answer for fome moments, and had wrought that change in his countenance which the other took notice of.

As foon as he could collect fpirits to fpeak, ' I-I-I am obliged to every one, f-f-for their good opinion of me,' faid he, with his eyes fixed on the ground, and faultering at every word; ' and hope I shall not f-f-f-· forfeit it, by accepting the favours of my friends.'-" How !' interrupted the other eagerly. " What can you " mean by that? You furely do not, cannot, avow !'-" As for that, fir !' returned my mafter, plucking up a little more affurance, ' what I avow or difavow is nothing to the purpole. I prefume that my most dear and wor-· thy friend, the colonel, had a right to leave his fortune to whom he pleafed; and that whoever he has left it to . has also a right to take it, without being answerable to · your opinion, or that of any others, who may be preju-· diced by you; for the world will judge better, and be · fatisfied that he had fufficient realons for what he has done.'- ' And fo, then, it is even fo !' replied the other, after a long paufe, ' and this is the return I meet for · raifing you from wretchedness, and admitting you to the first place in the effeem and confidence of my heart. Cherifh a viper in your bofom, and he will fting you to death. But it is beneath me to upbraid you! I · leave the revenge of my wrongs to your own confcience and the juffice of heaven; and from this moment dif-« clann

147

<sup>6</sup> claim all intercourfe with you; nor fhall my lips ever <sup>6</sup> more utter your name, if I can help it. The light of <sup>6</sup> you is a pain to me! I will fend a perfon to take my <sup>6</sup> affairs out of your hands, and define you will directly <sup>6</sup> provide yourfelf another habitation! Unhappy for me <sup>6</sup> was the day, when I first gave thelter to your milery in <sup>6</sup> mine.<sup>6</sup> Saying this, he turned away, without waiting for a reply, and left the room.

This infolent behaviour (for formy mafter called it, as foon as the other was gone) was fuch an affront to his bonour, as in his opinion cancelled all obligations, and justified every thing he had done, or could do against him. Giving vent to his refentment, therefore, in a burft of blasshemous execrations, he proceeded in the execution of his schemes, with this improvement, that, to obviate the imputations of bale diffionefty and ingratitude, which his own confcience told him his principal would publish to the world against him, he loaded him with every icandal that his inventive malice could fuggeft. But, instead of answering his purpose, produced the very contrary effect, as it put him under a neceffity of laying open things to vindicate his own character, which indignant fhame of having placed his confidence fo unworthily would otherwife have made him conceal ; and, in this inftance, the world was not dazzled by fuccefs, but directly paid his villany with the infamy it deferved.

As for the lady, failing made it neceffary for her to put on all the mimickry of woe, in which the perfitted moft decently for the utual time, at the end of which the found her hufband that was to be, fo flack in his addreffes, that the was obliged to court him, as fuch an unterted life was equally contrary to her intereft and inclinations. This anfwered a double end. It gratified his vanity (for he took care to make it known) and feemed to obviate the credit of the contract between them, thould it ever happen to be difcovered. Accordingly, he kept off a little longer; and at length contented, with the offected irrefotution of a man of the moft delicate principles and fenfe of honour. As he only got a legal right by his marriag Volz. III, N 2° to<sup>®</sup>

143

to what he was already in poffeffion of, he foon grew tired of the ftate, the circumftances of which, in his particular cafe, could not be very pleafing to any man. However, to avoid the evils of which he was molt immediately afraid, he went to live in the country, where he permitted his wife to fee nobody but thole he approved, and in company with himfelf. Nor was he fatisfied that his utmoft vigilance could prove effectual, as he had experience of the leofenefs of her principles, and her expertnels in all the arts of intrigue.

Their fituation, in thefe circumftances, may be eafly conceived. Continual iufpicions, quarrely, and recriminations aggravated their mutual dillike to the moft rancorous hatred, and made their lives fuch a fcene of mifery, that they themfelves looked upon it as a commencement of heaven's vengeance on their crimes; while all who knew them expected in horror that they would make that vengence ftill more fignally dreadful, by wreaking their hatred upon each other's lives, or their defpair upon their own. All the advantages, thus dearly earned, were an affluence difgufting for want of power of enjoyment, except in an external pomp that only mocked the mifery within, and made the meannefs it was defigned to hide the more remarkable.

## CHAP. XL.

Chryfal's maßter designs to set up a coach; but wants a material article towards making a proper figure with it. He confults with a berald, who gives him an elaborate differtation, not the most pleasing to him, on conts of arms, and the modern methods of making them, in which be unfolds many curious mysteries, and undertakes at last, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman. Chryfal changes his service. Conversation berween his new masser, and an antiquarian. Curious arguments, by which be proves the genuineness and impogrance of certain relies of antiquity. Chryfal changes his service.

IN this age of delicacy and refinement the first thing thought of in gentgel life is a carriage, which is fo indifpentibly necellary to procure refpect, that no emi-

140

nence in fcience, no practice of virtue is held in efteem, where that is wanted. Senfible of this, my mafter refolved to befpeak one, the elegance and grandeur of which should prove his taste and magnificent spirit. One difficulty though perplexed him not a little in the defign. This was, his want of a coat of arms to decorate the outfide of it, and difplay to the world his illustrious defcent. After much fruitless meditation on fo important a fubject, it occurred to him, that a herald mult be the proper perfon to confult with upon the belt means of remedying this defect. Accordingly, he inquired for the moft eminent in that way, and, on the morning fixed for his attendance, prepared to receive him, in fuch a manner as he imagined could not fail to infpire him with respect. He was lolling at breakfalt in an elbow-chair ; dreffed in a morning-gown of green damafk, with a red cap on his head, the cambric lining of which was edged with a rich lace, that turned up over it, and crimfon velvet flippers on his feet, one of which was extended on a cufhion of the fame materials, to give him the appearance of the gout, a diforder which he looked upon as an inconteftible proof of his being fprung from a good family, while his lady poured out his tea, and between every difh read a paragraph in the newspapers to entertain him.

As foon as the herald was shown in, my master cast an eye upon his lady, and nodding majeftically towards the door, fhe withdrew, and left him to his bulinels. After the usual queftions about the weather, and the news, my mafter at length entered upon the fubject. . I understand · S-S-S-Sir,' faid he, faultering, and almost blushing in fpite of his affurance, ' that you have great skill in he-" raldry; and therefore defired to fee you, to confult about " my c-c-c- coat of arms."-" I do prefume, fir," anfwered the herald with an air of importance ' to have fome knowledge in that myfterious and fublime fcience, and hope I shall not wrong the character you have re-· ceived of me, in any thing in which yo are pleafed to employ me. Hem ! ahem ! Pray, fir, what may be the \* nature of your present commands? I fuppole you want Vol. III, N 3 to

150

• to introduce into your own coat, the bearing of fome • branch of your family, which is fallen to you. There • is nothing in the world eafer to be done, that is by one, • who, as I faid before, underflands the fcience. It is • only dividing the field properly, and taking care that • the blazoning of the different quarterings, of which all 9 good families gain many in a long courfe of defcents, • may not be wrongly blended, as colour upon colour, or • metal upon metal, which you muft know is falfe heral-• dry; though I beg pardon, your blazoning is moft like-• ly in precious flones, the peculiar emblems of nobility • with us. But that makes no difference; as I will con-• vince you, if you pleafe to let me fee your arms."

<sup>6</sup> Sir, <sup>5</sup> replied my mafter, ftill more confounded by this jargon, <sup>6</sup> that is not what I want. I would have an entire n—n—new coat.<sup>3</sup>—<sup>6</sup> O! I underftand you, fir! <sup>9</sup> you are the firft of your family; and want to make arms <sup>6</sup> for yourfelf, as none of your anceftors have left you <sup>a</sup> any! Why, fir, that too may be done; but it muft be <sup>6</sup> with judgment and care, as I faid before, for fear of interfering with the arms of any other family. But, <sup>6</sup> you may truft me for that, fir! Half the arms you fee <sup>6</sup> cut fuch a figure about the town are of my devifing. <sup>6</sup> The king may make lords and knights of whom he <sup>6</sup> pleafes, but it is the herald muft make them gentlemen; <sup>6</sup> for what is any man without a coat of arms? Pray, fir, <sup>6</sup> what is your name ? and of what profefion was your <sup>6</sup> father?<sup>\*</sup>—

"Wh--wh--why do you afk, fir? I fuppofe there cannot be any thing material to your purpole in them?" 'Pardon me, good fir, they are material, very material. A name, efpecially if it confits of many fyllables, often gives an excellent hint; for, as much as your modern wits may affect to defpife the myfterious learning of *Rebufes*, wifer antiquity held it in higer repute, as you muft have obferved from the many illuftaious coats of arths taken entirely from the name: and then knowledge of the profeffion of a gentleman's father is abfolutely neceffary for many reafons. There are profeffions,

IST

he,

feffions, the implements of which are never dropped, becaule the profeffions themfelves are reckoned honourable, as there allo are others, nothing relating to which is ever borne, for the contrary reafon. The fon of a general or an admiral, for inftance, will have his armucharged with implements of war; but the fon of a man who keeps a chandler's flop will never bear a lump of butter, or bunch of candles, nor the fon of a tailor, a pair of fciffars or a thimble; for thefe would at once betray what is defigned to be hid; and therefore it is abfolutely neceffary that I fhould be informed of thefe particulars #----

· B-b-b- but, fir, can you not ftrike out fomething entirely new, without alluding to any name or profeffion " at all ? I am willing to pay you well for your trouble, " only let me have fomething elegant and grand." " I ' understand you, fir. I'll engage to please you. I'll " quarter you the coat of a crowned head in an instant, " without any body's being able to fay a word againft it. ' Leave it to me; and I'll engage to pleafe you; not the " richeft contractor or nabob of them all shall make fuch " a figure."- " And pray, fir, what is your price, for a 'job of this kind ?'- 'Price, fir ? I never make bar-"gains ! let common mechanics do that ? gentlemen always make me a prefent, when they befpeak their ho-" nours ; and, according to the value of that, my inven-" tion is either high or low." "Well, fir, it fhan't fink ' on that account now. Here are ten guineas for you, as ' an earneft of what I will give, if I like your work, " when it is done.'- ' Sir ? you may depend on having the " higheft arms of any man in the kingdom. Your gene-' rofity fhows that you ought to be a gentleman ; and it " fhall be my fault if I don't make you one, in the fight of the world.'-Saying this, he took his leave, when I was heartily glad to go with him, being part of the price paid upon this occasion for the making of a gentleman.

As loon as my new malter went home, he retired to his clofet, and taking out the money he had just received, 'Hal ha! ha! no bad price for a little *daubing*?' faid

152

he, laughing and chinking the purfe. 'I wonder how the fellow could be fuch an afs as to think that any thing · in my power to do could make him pais for a gentle-" man! But let him have his way! his folly is my gain; and it is no more than justice, that one who has cheated " the world fo long fhould cheat himfelf at last, and fa-" crifice the earnings of villany to vanity ! But, hold ! "this is about the time my Antiquarian was to come. Let me fee those ancient manufcripts and inferiptions " which I had done last week ! Upon my life, they look very well. The canker upon this copper, and the fmoke upon this parchment are as natural as if they were the " work of a thousand years; and these fcrawls might " pais even for the spells of the witch of Endor, they have fo little likenefs to any marks made to convey thought, at this time. He is a very pretty fellow that did them, " and deferves encouragement."

Just as he faid this, the perfon he expected came, and entering without ceremony upon his bufinefs, " I called " upon you, fir,' faid he, ' to fee those things you mentioned to me. If they are really what you defcribe, we " fhall not differ about the price, high as it is." " I hope, fir,' answered my master, ' you have not fo mean an opinion of my judgment, as to imagine I could ever " think of impoling upon you. No, fir ! I know that to be impoffible; even if I could be bale enough to at-' tempt it ; and, therefore, would not mention any thing " to you, that could admit of the leaft doubt to a perion of your profound learning. As to the price, I could " have had much more fince I faw you; but I thought it · but justice to their merit to offer them first to you, as " there is no other collection in the kingdom worthy of ' them, and I am above rifing in a demand I have once " made, though infinitely flort of their intrinfic value, as 'you will be convinced, the moment you fee them. "Here, fir, is the manufcript, which "I had the good for-" tune to meet with, as I was rummaging among fome old records in our office, that had never been ltirred fince the reign of Henry the eighth. The paper in which

bit

" it was wrapped was fo decayed, that it mouldered quite ' away, fo immediately upon its coming into the open ' air, that I had fcarce time to read the contents, which " were that this parchment had been found in the tomb of Thomas à Becket, upon the breaking up of his " fhrine at the reformation, and was laid up there, on ac-" count of its antiquity. That it must have been very ancient, even before his time, the colour and decay of " the parchment would fufficiently prove, were there not ' other proofs still more convincing to fuch as have judg-" ment to comprehend them. The shape of the letter shows ' its age. This manner of writing, as appears by com-' paring it with other ancient manufcripts, was intro-'duced in the beginning of the fecond century of the " christian æra, and quite dropped by the middle of the ' third. Within that period, therefore, it must have been " written. It's antiquity being thus fixed, the purport of 'it is next to be confidered; and of that, and its im-· portance, there can be no just room to doubt. This fpot at the bottom of the parchment, though fo much · defaced by time, bears a ftrong refemblance to the im-· preffion of a mitre, and thereby proves that fome bishop " was the author of what was written over it, into which these four letters, m-a-t-h, fortunately fo very ' plain, give the cleareft light; for as they must have been ' part of the word Arimathæa, they prove that the opinion of Joseph of Arimathæa having first preached the gofpel in Britain was known fo early as in the fe-· cond century, and fo decide that long-contested point; " as, who can be fuch an infidel as to doubt a thing given " thus, as I may fay, under the facred feal of the mitre, " and that fo very near the time."

• Very true; but is it not as probable, that the defign • of this writing was to refute that opinion, as to con-• firm it ?

<sup>c</sup> My good fir, <sup>f</sup>I you allow weight to fuch trivial ob<sup>c</sup> jections as this, you give up all the knowledge of an
<sup>c</sup> antiquarian, which never amounts higher, than to poffi<sup>c</sup> ble conjecture, without regard to probability even againft
<sup>c</sup> him ;

153

154

him; for conjectures fuch as this, founded on effaced remains of antiquity, are of much greater weight in the learned world, becaufe they flow more learning \* than the plainest conclusions drawn from evident and · complete records, as these are obvious to any common · perfon. But, why do I mention thefe things to you, who understand them fo much better than I pretend to do.'- 'I believe I do, fir, know fomething of those " matters; and was fatisfied both of its antiquity and · importance, at the first glance of my eye; though I · ftarted that objection for mere amufement. But where is the fragment? I fhould be glad to fee that alfo."-"Here it is, fir;' answered my master, taking a bit of broken copper out of a box, in which it was carefully wrapped in cotton, ' This plate of copper was torn, in " the manner you fee, from the head of a fepulchral mo-' nument, on the top of Mount Libanus, by a perfon " who had been fent thither by a celebrated fociety, on · purpose to seek for such things ; and at his return made " me a prefent of it, as the most valuable acquisition he . had made, out of gratitude for my having helped him to the job. Obferve this canker, fir, ! Much as it has \* been rubbed off in the carriage, the depth and colour " of it flow, that it must have been some thousands of ' years in gathering. What the occasion of fetting it up was, fome particular circumftances direct to a con-· jecture fufficiently probable. You fee this hole, which ' the canker has eaten almost through the copper, with ' this ftroke turning up over it. This certainly is the ' remains of the figure of a lion, as is plain from theie two tufts in the middle, and at the end of the ftroke, " which must have been the tail of it. Now, as a lion " was the emblem of Judah, it cannot be doubted but fome great perfonage of that tribe must have been buried " where this emblem was fet up-a circumftance, that io · clearly proves the antiquity of coateof arms, that I do " not know how to think of parting with it, as it affords " fuch an illustration to a treatile I am at this time en-\* gaged in writing on that fublime and difficult fubject." - Not

155

- Not part with it !' replied the antiquarian, returning it carefully into the box, and then cramming the box. into his bolom. 'You must get it first, my good friend, 'to part with. Ha! ha! ha! a very pretty jest, truly; vou offer a thing to fale, and fet a price upon it, and then you cannot part with it! a very pretty jeft, truly ! 'Here is your money, both for the manufcript and the fragment ; and when you meet with any other fuch precious remains of antiquity, I shall be obliged to you to let me have the preference. Nobody will give you a better price.'-Saying this, he reached my mafter a bank-note, which he took with an air of diffatisfaction ; and while he was telling out change, ' You do as you ' please with me, fir,' faid he, ' this time; but the next ' I shall be more upon my guard. I am glad, however, " that it goes into fo noble a collection as your's, where ' it will have juffice done to its merit.'- ' Aye, fir !' anfwered the antiquarian, with a finile of felf-complacency. " I have been at fome pains, and expence too, to make a collection ; and have the fatisfaction to think, that, " whenever I die, it will make as good a figure in a fale ' catalogue as that of most of my contemporaries. T " shall leave proofs behind me, that I have not spent my " life in vain, What would I not give to hear the cha-' racter which an able auctioneer will give of me, upon opening the fale! I wish my good friend Puff may out-' live me, to have the job. There is no man fets forth the merit of any thing in fuch happy terms. He has words at will, as they fay. What a high opinion will " he raife of my learning, tafte, and judgment ! But that's ' right-You faid you wanted this fragment, for a particular occafion : I am by no means averfe to obliging ' you. You are welcome to quote it, as in my collec-" tion, fuppole in this, or lome fuch manner, "as appears," " (proving what you have advanced before)"by a most va-" luable, and rare antique fragment (or whatever elfe you " fhall call it) in the most curious, or colly, or inefti-" mable, or noble, or perhaps all these, collection of " my late moft learned, and juditious, and indefatigable, ss and

156

" and munificent friend," 'or whateverother titles of the kind your judgment and regard thall dictate to you.'---I am much obliged to you for the favour,' returned my mafter, fcarce able to reftrain his laughter, ' and thall be ' fure to avail myfelf of it, at the proper time, as allo to ' do it in a manner, which, however fhort it may fall of ' your merit, will yet teftify my high and refpectful ' lenfe of it.'--Saying this, he gave him the change of his note, among which I was, and fent him away happy. CHAP. XLI.

A modest method of seeking fame. Chrysal's master confirms bimself in his resolution to gratify an uncommon curosity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner in vehich he classed and entered his new acquisitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an auction, where he makes an extraordinary purchase. Chrysal changes his service for that of the auctioneer. Specimen and effects of his new master's eloquence, learning, and judgment.

MAN'S fpending his life and fortune, in buying up I books of learning, and obscure remains of antiquity, only to make a great fale after his death, was a method of feeking fame more modeft than I had hitherto met among mankind. As foon as my new mafter reached home, he went directly into his mufæum, and taking out his rare purchases, stared at them for some time in a kind of ftupid delight, till no longer able to contain it, "What " an opinion,' faid he, " will the world have of me, when " all these come to be shown for fale? I hope my worthy friend Puff will live to do me juffice ! What if I should beg of him to give me a fpecimen of the manner in " which he will fet them out ? He cannot refuse me that " gratification, in return for all the money he has taken from me, especially as I have told him, that I defign " he shall have the job. It has the fanction of one of the greatest names in antiquity to Support it. Cicero, the great Cicero, defired his friend, the hiftorian, to let · him know what he intended to fay of him ; and need I ' hefitate to follow his "trample? Whatever has the au-· therity

157

· thority of antiquity must be right; and, therefore, I " will go to him directly about it .- But, hold ! I muft " enter these articles in my catalogue first.'-Then taking down an huge folio, richly bound, and inferibed Catalogue, on the back and fides, in capitals of gold, he fat down to infert this valuable addition to his treafure, and opening the book with great deliberation, ' What are the " heads,' faid he, " under which they are to be claffed ? "Let me fee ! Antiques ! No ! that is for my coins, and What is the next ? Ancient manu-<sup>s</sup> bufts, and urns. fcripts and fragments! Aye! thefe are they. Let me confider, now, what are the titles !' --- Then laying the fore-finger of his right hand upon the tip of his nofe, fupporting his chin with his thumb, fhutting his eyes, and leaning back in his chair, on the arm of which he refted his elbow, ' How unlucky it was,' refumed he, after a long pause, ' that he did not tell their names ! " I was afhamed to afk him directly, though I did as " much, if he had minded me. But, can't I make them out, from what he faid ? A very antique manufcript-No I that will not do. Antique is for works of art ; ancient is the word here .- A very ancient manufcript · written by Thomas à Becket in the fecond century, and . found in his tomb, at the refloration, proving that Joseph " of Arimathæa was an English bishop .- Yes! That is it. And then for the fragment-a very ancient-no, antique. Antique is the word for fragments, they are " made by art-A very antique fragment torn from a mo-" nument on Mount Libanus, proving that fome great per-" fon was buried there; and that a lion was the arms of " Judab .- Aye! thefe will do! I knew I could make them out. This is just the fubstance of what he faid, · but in fewer and better words. Titles should be short and pithy. Multum in parvo-Much in a little compais. Let me alone for hitting off a ftriking title. I " have not been an antiquarian to long for nothing."-Then conning them over twice or thrice, to try how they Lunded, he entered them in his cataloge, and putting the book back into its place, fat down to contemplate his 0 1 OWR VOL. III.

1 58

own confequence in the learned world. But, fublime as this enjoyment was, his indefatigable industry would not permit him to indulge it long. 'Hah !' faid he, ftarting, as upon fudden recollection, ' that's right ! the fale of those Chinese characters, brought over in the last fleet, comes on about this very time. It was quite out of my, . head ; and I would not have miffed them on any account, They'll make a capital article; for the Chinefe e tafte is coming into fuch great vogue, that I suppose " we fhall foon learn their language; though I fhould be forry to fee that too; as it would leffen the value of my Chinele books; for books are now valued the more for not being understood, as I know by experience, ' having laid out many a pound in the purchase, of fuch as I understood no more of than if they were Chinefe. " But let those who know no other use of books but to " read them buy only fuch as they can read; I collect "mine for another purpofe, and a noble collection I will have, let it coft me what it will : I care not whether I die worth a groat befide : the fame of that is fortune enough for me.'

Purituant to this noble refolution, he went directly to the fale, where he was fo charmed with the auctioneer's learning and eloquence, that he out-bade every body, and carried off in triumph the curious, the rare, the ineltimable key into all the myfterious, the profound, the fublime wifdom of that prince of all philofophers, legiflators, and hierarchs, the divine Con-fut-fee, and all his learned and judicious difciples and commentators, the Chinefe characters, in paying for which, I changed his fervice for that of the auctioneer.

My new mafter proceeded, for the remainder of the fale, to difplay his abilities in the fame extraordinary manner; giving circumflantial accounts of things he knew nothing of; and bedrowing the moft extravagant prailes for excellencies of his own invention, often inconfiftent with each other, and with the fubject to which they were ignorantly attributed, with a confidence that bore down doubt, and gained implicit credit with the gaping crowd, in defiance

150

fiance to reafon, and their very fenfes, till heled them on by little and little to pay the price of fuch an imaginary value. But this will be beft explained by an inftance that happened just after I came into his possession. The fale of that day confided nominally of the collection of a cheefemonger lately deceafed, who had been an eminent antiquarian and virtuofo. I fay nominally; becaufe, though the whole went under his name, fcarce the tenth part of it had ever been his, the reft being made up from every quarter by my master. Among the rare, curious, and coffly articles exhibited on this occasion, was a vefiel of Porcelaine, of an uncommon shape, ornamented with feveral odd and uncouth reprefentations of animals, and fome fingers not unlike the characters of a language. ' Gentlemen,' faid my master, as foon as this was produced, ' you here fee one of the rareft, and most valuable remains of antiquity, ever brought into Europe. " This bere superb vafe was the identical cup out of which ' the fublime emperors of China for numberless ages ' drank the confecrated wine, on the day of their coro-' nation. It was found, gentlemen, among the treasures ' of the great Mogul, by Thomas Couli Can, when he ' dethroned that there prince, out of a wreck of whole ' spoils, when they were loft in passing the river of the ' Indies, it was faved by a Chinele Nabob, from whom ' it was afterwards taken, together with his crown, by ' that there beaven born general, who made those effemi-" nate and daftardly Indians tremble at the name of an " Englishman, and given by him as a precious token of ' his effeem to the deceased, his very learned and curious friend. This, gentlemen, is in few words the whole, full, and true account of this bere ineftimable curiofity, every word of which can be proved by unquestionable au-' thority. As for the vale itfelf, exclusive of all this, its ' own merits give it fufficient value. Observe these bere ' figures, gentlemen; they are Egyptian hieroglyphics de-' noting the duties of a fovereign, which those wile mandarines always take care to instruct their emperors in. This bere lion, for inftance, fignifies that he must be courageous 0. YOL. III

160

courageous and valiant : this fox, that he must be wife ; " and to on. But the most extraordinary thing of all, gentlemen, is these bere characters. They are a talifman, or charm, invented by Mahomet to protect the <sup>6</sup> owner of this cup from the influence of evil fpirits. I do not prefume, gentlemen, to ftand up for the virtue of fuch things. The notion of fpirits, I am sensible, is much exploded; and the religion of Mahomet cried down among us ; but still, gentlemen, without enter-' ing into these here nice points, we all know that he was " a great man, and lived a long while ago, which is fufficient to make any thing that was his of great value 6 to men of learning, who are above prejudice in these " matters. But, besides all this, these here characters are of the greatest importance, on another account ; as " they prove beyond difpute, that the true method of writ-" ing the learned languages was without accents, not one " appearing, as you fee, gentlemen, in the most original and authentic relic of ancient learning, and fo put an end to that there controverfy, that has fo long puzzled " the world. It were prefumption in me, gentlemen, to e attempt putting a value on a thing that is invaluable. " I will, therefore, fet it up at what you pleafe, as you " are the best judges. This only I will make bold to fay, " that the beft judge of all will have it, as he will give " molt for it; for too much it is impoffible to give."

So juft an account, and fuch judicious praife, could not fail of effect. The virtuofi round him, fatisfied that what he faid muft be true, becaufe fpoken with confidence, and above their comprehenfion, vied with each other for the polleffion of fo ineftimable a treafure, till they raifed it to an height, at which they themfelves were furprifed, as foon as the fpirit of bidding began to cool, and they had time to reflect.

# CHAP, XLII.

An unfavory account flops bim fort in his barangue. He turns off the jeft with another, and accounts learnedly for what has bappened. The real caufe, and conjeguence of that accident. Reflections on auctioneering, and the saufes of its fuccefs. CHAP.

THIS was the time for which he always referved the I higheft flights of his eloquence, to raife that fpirit again. Refuming, therefore, his harangue, 'You paule,' gentlemen,' faid he, ' only to confider how much far-" ther you may rife with fafety ; for it is impoffible that · perfons of your profound tafte and judgment fhould difgrace them fo much, as to let fuch a jewel go for a mere trifle. Do not take my word, gentlemen, for its value. ' I may be miltaken, but you cannot. Examine it, therefore, yourfelves. Observe the beauty of these here un-. known figures : read these unintelligible characters ; and fmell the aromatic odour which the vale still retains, and ever will retain, from the quinteffences of all the fpices of the Indies, which used to be mixed with the confecrated wine. The perfume is almost enough " to revive the dead."

Saying this, he went to fmell it himfelf, to lead the way to the reft, and putting the mouth of it to his nofe, without taking off the cover, that the fragrance fhould not evaporate, as he raifed his hand, a ftream, that emitted a favour far from aromatic, gushed out into his face, and filled his mouth, as well as nofe, with fomething more fubitantial than perfume. It is impoffible to deferibe his fituation, at fuch a difgraceful accident .--Surprise, fhame, and loathing aggravated each other, and threw him into fuch coufusion, as once in his life deprived him of utterance for fome moments. As foon as he had emptied his mouth, and wiped his face, ' Villain,' fputterd he, to his fervant, ' how has this happened ? . Whom have you let play me this bafe, malicious, low-" lived trick ?'- S-S-Sir,' answered the fellow, as well as his ftruggle to fupprefs his laughter permitted him to fpeak, ' I know nothing of the matter, I never · left any one a moment alone among the things, but " them there ladies, who I told you fent me out for a glafs of ratafia, the other morning, and how could I have fufpected their doing fuch a thing ?'-" Ratafia !' replied my master, who had by this time recovered his affurance, and knew the best way to turn off one jest by 03 YOL. III.

161

762

another, ! Gin, you fhould fay; for, if I can judge by taffe and fmell, that is their liquor. I fuppole they did it on purpole to revenge their fex upon Mahomet, for taking away their fouls (I with he had alfo taken away the filthinets of their difpofitions) by defiling fo celebrated a monument of his learning and fkill, in this nafty manner, Ha! ha ! ha !'

The oddity of fuch a thought naturally made the company join in his laugh; but could not fo far wipe off the difgrace which the defiled vafe had fuffered, as to make any more be offered for it, fo that it was forced to be knocked down to the last bidder, at not much more than if it had been made of gold, at which the purchaser and my master were equally mortified, though for different and with very unequal reasons. As for the caufe of this misfortune, it was really what the iervant faid. One of the ladies who came to view the curiofities having certain preffing occafions, feigned a pretence to fend him out; and in the mean time made fuch use of this vale, being the first conveniency that came to her hand, as overpowered the fcent of fome fpices, which had been put into it for the purpole. It was fortunate for my master, that this was the last article in the fale of that day, as a spirit of ridicule could not be favourable to his bufinefs .---As foon as the company were gone, he fettled his ac-counts, and fumming up the profits, 'Why this is pretty " well !' faid he, rubbing his hands, and fhrugging up his shoulders, ' this does pretty well ! Though, if that damn'd " accident had not happened,' turning up his nole, and fpitting with loathing, 'it would have been much <sup>6</sup> better. The fools were in the humour, and wanted only to be kept up. However, I have not much right to complain upon the whole. That there Jordan colt " me five shillings, and I have fold it for fifty pounds. " Much good may the judicious buyer make of his bargain. This is the happinels of a man's having his tongue well hung. A mealy mouth will never do for " my bufineis; which after all is the beft going. I might have flood freezing belfind a counter this month, and not 4 made

16:

<sup>6</sup> made half this much, in the way of fair trade, as it is <sup>6</sup> called, people have their fenfes about them, and ftand <sup>6</sup> to examine before they buy, but any trumpery will go <sup>6</sup> off in this way.<sup>7</sup>

I have observed your astonishment at the easiness with which my mafter fucceeded in fuch groß impofition ; but the reason of it is obvious. All mankind have an ambition of diftinguishing themselves, one way or another; and generally choose that, in which they have the least qualifications to entitle them to fuccefs, in order to hide their own deficiency. The coward, for instance, affects valour; the blockhead knowledge; and the illiterate tradefman, who has made a fortune by plodding on in fome illiberal bufinels, tafte and judgment in the abstrufest purfuits of learned curiofity, in which, as there is no fixed rule to judge by, caprice takes the direction, and opens an ample field for imposition. As to the business of auctioneering in general, it owes the greater part of that fuccefs, with which my mafter was to well pleafed, to another caufe-the defire of buying bargains, which governs every one who buys any thing, makes people crowd to those places, where things are to be fold, not as in the regular courie of trade, for what they appear to be worth, but for the most that can be got for them ; and there emulation, dependence on each other's judgment, 'those peo-" ple know what they are doing, and would not bid fo " much, if it was not worth more,' and the oratory of the auctioneer leads them by infenfible advances, as their fpirits rife, to give prices, which they never meant to give, when they began to bid. That great bargains are often got at fuch places is true, but that is chiefly in a particular branch of the bufinefs, the myftery of which will be explained to you.

#### CHAP. XLIII.

Chryfal's mafter is wifited by a connoilfeur, to whom he gives a bort receipt how to make his pictures fell, and makes fome firiking remarks, on the difregard people form for their families, which fends his wifter away in a buff. MX

164

MY mafter was interrupted in his pleafing medita-tions, by the entrance of a gentleman, the fight of whom promifed him the greatest pleasure of carrying the fubject of them into execution. After fome judicious remarks on the tafte of the town, and the prefent flate of wirtu, in the course of which each liberally complimented the other, ' Pray, fir,' faid the gentleman, ' how to ' pictures fell this feafon ?'- ' Never better, fir,' anfwered my mafter, ' Pictures are every body's money, now, A good mafter brings any thing ; and what is more, " I am convinced they will rife ftill higher, fo that buyers have no time to lofe, I have a fale next week, when you will fee fuch prizes as will aftonish you. There are fome things there, that I know you will have, let " them cost what they will, they fuit your fine collection " fo exactly.'- " Why as to that,' replied the gentleman, " my mind is a good deal changed. I have taken it into f my head lately to part with my pictures, and have · therefore called upon you to defire that you will come in the morning, and let me know what you think they " are worth,'- " Worth, fir! they are worth a great deal f of money; which there is not the leaft danger but they will bring, if they are managed properly. There is " more, fir, in the management of a fale, much more than " most people dream of, I assure you,'-" I am fensible f of that, fir; and also of your abilities in fuch manage-' ment, which you will have the best encouragement to exert on this occasion, as I propose felling the whole 6 to you together, if we can agree.'

This turn came fo unexpected that it ftruck my mafter quite down in the mouth, as he was fentible that he had over-floot himfelf, and ipoiled his market by faying fo much. It is very unlucky, fir,' anfwered he, changing his note directly, ' that I did not know your intention ' fooner. I could then have divided them properly among the feveral fales of the featon; but's is now quite too ' late; this berg one next week is the laft; and the cata-' logues for that are all made out, and difperfed, fo that ' there is no pollibility of *flipping* in a fingle article. ' Befuets,

165

12

Befides, the buyers have laid out all their money. — Slipping in, fr.3, I do not underftand you. Do not you think my pictures are fufficient, both in number and value, to make a fale by themfelves? I am fure, I have more than once known you make aoife enough about collections in no refpect equal to mine. There muft be fome myftery in this, which I cannot comprehend. — Very true, fir, there are myfteries, as you obferve, in all bufineffes; and perhaps in none more than ours. — I am not inquiring into your myfteries. All I defire to know is, why, after juft telling me that pictures never bore fo high a price as at this time, and that mine could not fail of bringing a great deal of money, you 'fhouid fo foon change your opinion. —

· Pardon me, fir, I have not changed my opinion in the ' leaft; and shall be very proud to ferve you to the beft of my abilities, in the way of a fale; but there is a material reafon, why I must beg to be excused in buying ' them, to ftand the hazard of it myfelf.'-' I should be glad to know what that reafon can be, for I muft own ' I cannot conceive it.'- ' Why, fir, it is a thing to be fure that may feem odd to you; but experience has taught us the truth of it. In fhort, fir, it is your be-'ing alive.'- 'How ! my being alive ! What difference " can my life or death make in the value of my pictures ?" -A very great one, fir, I affure you. In all the courfe of my bufineis, I never knew one inftance of a fale's going off well, where the owner was living. People " conclude that a perion parts with pictures either through diflike, or neceffity. The former, you know, depre-' ciates them at once ; nor does the other much lefs ; as people of fathion detpife a man, and every thing belong-'ing to him, the moment it is known that he is in dif-' trefs. Bendes, an auctioneer's tongue is tied up from faying any thing of a perfon's tafte, and judgment, and all that, while he is living, it founds to fulfome; and ' you are senfible that a good character of the collector often goes a great way in helping off a collection. ----" The beft thing, then, for a man to do on fuch an occa-· fiong

166

fion, I prefume, would be to thoot himfel through the " head ! Heh ?'- " Ha ! ha ! ha ! You are pleased to jeft, fir ; but to be fure it would be of geat advantage, Cu-" riofity brings all the world upon those occasions, and then a man has an opportunity of faying fo many things, as that the deceased would not take ten times fo much, " if he were living; or, that the high price he gave for it caused the diffress that made him kill himself; or a 6 thousand other striking things of the kind. I never · have fo much pleafure as upon those occasions, they give a man fuch room to fhow himfelf. Indeed, if gentle-" men confidered the thing in time, more of them would · take this method of delivering themfelves and their fa-" milies both from diftrefs, and not defer it till all is gone, " and the furvivors can make nothing by their death ; but few people take any care for their families now o'days, . It is a bold pufh, to be fure; though not fo bad as a "man's fhooting himfelf to win a wager, neither. I · fhould beg your pardon, fir, for speaking to freely, but s as I know it is not your cafe, you cannot take offence; " though, even if I thought it was, I would not prefume to recommend fuch a thing, for the world. Every perion is to judge for himfelf. I only give you my opinion " what effect it would have."- " I understand you very " well, fir,' answered the gentlemen, who had much difficulty to hear him out, ' and in return for your opi-" nion will give you my advice, which is, to confider betf ter whom you speak to in this infolent manner another f time, for fear of receiving fuch chaltifement, as contempt alone prevents my giving you this moment."-On faying which words he turned about, and left the room,

CHAP. XLIV.

Chryfal's master receives an agreeable summons. His encomiums on the generofity of merchants, and account of the way many of them acquire reputation for taste and judgment. He meets the merchant, who confults him on a different branch of his bufine is from that which he expected. Chryfal's master, in order to encourage his customer, gives a large account of his own abilities, and opens fome curious fecrets in e bis

367

his bufinels. A bargain is flruck, to the mutual fatisfaction of both parties; and Chryfal changes his fervice for that of the merchant.

X/ELL as my mafter was accustomed to rebukes, there was fomething in, the nature of this which difconcerted him fo much, that he had not power to make the gentleman any reply. But he was foon relieved from the trepidation into which it threw him, by a meffage from an eminent merchant, to meet him directly at a neighbouring tavern. ' Aye,' faid he, adjufting his wig at the glafs, and putting on his cloak, ' this is the thing ! \* There is forme difference between treating with a good \* substantial citizen, who will mind what a man fays, \* and your people of fashion, who fly into a rage, forfooth, \* if they can't have their own way, in every thing. No \* people part with their money fo freely as merchants, "They don't fland higgling, and criticizing like the tothers. All they require is, to be asked a good price, ' and then they think a thing must be good of course. " Many a time have I got five times more from a mer-\* chant, than I dared to have afked from a duke. I fup-\* pole he wants to flow his tafte next week at the fale; t and has fent for me, to tell him which are the best pieces, \* and how much he may bid for them. He is not the first \* citizen whom my inftructions have made pais for a man of tafte and judgment. I love fuch pupils, they pay fo " well for their learning; and that more ways than one; \* for they buy what no body elfe would bid for; it is only " flipping a puffer or two of quality at them, enough t of whom come thanking to every fale for that purpofe only, and they may be railed to any price. No people \* part with their money like merchants."

When he came to the tavern, he found the merchant waiting for him. After the compliments common upon fuch occafions were glolitely interchanged, 'I defired to 'lee you,' faid the merchant, proceeding to bulinefs, though not without evident confution, 'on an affair, 'that will convince you of my confidence in your abilities ' and honour. Trade, as you know, has been to dead for 'f fome 168

fome time past, that there is no getting is a penny of \* money, without tearing people to pieces. Now, as I had rather fuffer fomething myfelf, than opprefs any . honeft man, till he can bring his affairs about, I fhould · be glad to difpofe of fome parcels of goods, even under • their value, to raife money for prefent occasions, that is, provided it can be done in fuch a manner, as not to " be known, as fuch a thing might injure a man's credit." · Dear fir,' answered my master, whose heart leaped with joy, at the mention of fuch an affair, ' never fear that; · I'll engage to manage it fo, that if every one who knows " you were to watch, they'd never even fufpect the leaft · of the matter. There is nothing eafier, for more com-" mon in the way of bufinefs; and it luckily happens, that " I have the finest opportunity, at this very time, that ever I had in my life. I have a large fale under a com-" million, the very week after next, into which I can hedge " a thoufand or two, with the greatest ease and fafety. · Affignees never take notice of fuch things. We underftand one another better than that. Many a worthy man have I enabled to hold his head above water, for years, by this method. To be fure, it must have an end fome time ; but then a man stands in fortune's way for a lucky ' hit, you know ; and not only that, but also makes fure of fo much good living, in the mean time, and can be no " worfe at the last : and then, when all comes to all, and there must be a blow-up, it gives him an opportunity of fecuring fomething against a rainy day, as the faying is. As for its being difcovered, there are ways enough to prevent that. It is but entering them as fold, " and I'll find a buyer, that shall never be heard more of. . Lord, fir, if it was not for things of this kind, our bufi-" nefs would be nothing to what it is. Half the fales you · fee every day in the papers are made up in this manner. - Well, fir,' replied the merchant, who had liftened to him with attention, and feemed greatly affected at fome part of what he faid, ' I prefume you understand your bufinefs, and as I have no doubt of your honour, I shall · leave the whole entirely to your management. Here is é an

an account of the particulars which I want to difficient at this time. They are in a private warehoule, whither I have had them conveyed, to be ready for the purpole, of which this is the key; and here is a bill of fale, which I will execute directly, as I have an occafion for two thousand pounds this very evening. You fee there is value, more than fufficient for double that fum, as you will be a better judge when you fee the goods, but the reft can fland forward till they are disposed of, and the account made up."— Really, fir, I should be extremely glad to ferve you, but I fear, I have not fo much cash by me. However, if you please, I'll go with you, and look at the goods; and then I'll flep home, and try what I can do."

Accordingly, away they went together to the warehoufe; where my matter being fatisfied with the value of the goods, left the merchant, and hied him home directly with a joyful heart for the money. ' So !' faid he, to himfelf, as he went along, 'I thought what things " would come to, in the end ! His coach, and country-' houfe! his wife's routes; and his own kept miltrefs ' have made quick work with him. I believe fuch men " must imagine the reft of the world to be blind, or they ' would never go on at fuch a rate. I fuppofe he's pre-" paring for a place in the gazette to morrow, or next day. " But that is no affair of mine. I'll take care to make a ' fafe bargain for myfelf ; and let him look to the reft. I am not to fwear for him. Of all the bufinefs in our ' way, I like this the beft. A man can make up what ' account he pleafes, without danger of its being difputed " with him. All here is fnug and fecure. If I could but ' get jobs enough of this kind, I'd let who would chaffer for toys and daubings with people of quality, who often ' out-fharp us, in fpite of all our experience.

By this time he reached home, where he foon made up the money, with the help of that and the former day's fale, without hefitating a moment at its not being his own, and taking with him proper perfons to attelf his bargain, and new locks to make fire of it, returned to the VOL. III. P merchant,

170.

merchant, with whom he foon concluded every thing, without fcruple or delay on either fide, and then paying him on the fpot, in bank-notes and cafh (among the latter of which I was) fent him away, as well fatisfied, as he himfell flaid behind.

## CHAP. XLV.

Motive of Chryfal's new mafter for making fuch a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant mag make of being in the Houfe. A flort fletch of an election. The curious methods which Chryfal's mafter took, to evade the laws againft bribery. He takes offence at the unreafonable prefumption of his conflituents, and referves to make the most of the bargain he has bought from them, which by a fingular piece of management he propoles to make chaper than they think. Chryfal changes his fervice for that of the idol of an inn. The configuences of electioneering. Some a curious purpole. An expedient to prevent the fale of point for mind and body. Chryfal again changes his fervice.

THEN a man has fixed his mind upon gaining a particular end, he flights any inconveniencies which may attend the means. Though my new mafter was fenfible of the lois he must fuffer by his bargain, the prospect of accomplishing the purpole for which he made it prevented its giving him any concern. As foon as he got home, he gave orders to have his equipage made ready for a journey into the country, early next morning, and then retiring into his closet, for a few moments, before he went to bed, ' At length,' faid he, with a look of felfcongratulation, ' I shall compass, what I have to long fet \* my heart upon. What an advantage it is for a mer-" chant to be in the House! I can laugh at bailiffs and ' bankruptcies for five years at leaft; and in the mean time I shall have a thousand opportunities of making • my fortune, by pufhing boldly in the alley, now that • all fears of the immediate conlequences are over, or get-\* ting beneficial contracts with the government, or at · least fome genteel and profitable employment under it. A merchant may make many advantages of being in s the

171

the Houfe ! Confound that prating fellow ! I was once afraid that he fmoaked my defign, he came fo near fome unlacky circumftances; but it was above his cut. All his fchemes are common, and low-lived. This of mine is a mafter-ftroke. It is playing deep, to be fure ! Fifteen hundred for my feat; and what with other expences, and the lofs upon this night's work, as much more. It is playing damn'd deep. But it is too late to think of that now. I have fported many a thoufand upon a worfe chance in my time. At any rate, I can laugh at bailiffs and bankruptcies for five years at leatt. What an advantage it is to a merchant to be in the Houfe!

Saying this, he went to bed, where the advantages of being in the Houfe ftill ran to ftrongly in his head, that he dreamed of nothing all night, but bullying creditors, and cringing to minifters; doing jobs, and getting contracts, places, and penfions.

In pursuance of his scheme, he fet out next morning, with a fplendid retinue, for the borough he had in view, where he managed matters with fuch judgment and generolity, keeping the whole town drunk from the moment he arrived, according to the policy which permits a candidate to deprive his electors of their fenses, in order to enable them to judge the better of his legiflative abilities, that he was elected in preference to a gentleman, the munificence of whole family had for many generations been the chief fupport of the place, and who himfelf fpent his ample fortune in hospitality and beneficence in it, but difdained to buy the votes of a venal crew, on this occa-As fuch a competitor naturally had every man of fion. worth and honour in his intereft, it had been neceffary for my mafter to proceed with the utmost care and circumspection. Accordingly, instead of directly giving his voters money, he lent them the prices flipulated, on the fecurity of their notes of hand, payable in a certain time, an expedient, in which he had a further view, than barely evading the laws against fuch practices.

Every thing being concluded, he was preparing to depart in triumph, when his configuents waited upon him Vol. III. Pa

172

in form, with certain instructions, for executing the truft they had thus repoled in him. Though he looked upon this as fuch a bare-faced piece of infolence, that he fcarce knew how to bear it, yet, as he had not yet taken his feat, he received their commands with the politeft humility, and promifed the most faithful obedience to them. But they were no fooner out of his fight, than he changed his note. ' Impudent, unreasonable scoundrels !' faid he to himfelf, giving vent to his indignation, as he walked backward and forward in the room, ' to talk of having · reposed your trust in me, and pretend to give me in-" ftructions! I have bought you; and I will fell you to the \* beft bidder, if he were the devil; and a bad bargain he " will have of you, if he buys you as dear as I have .--" Though I have a stroke in my head, to bring myfelf home, that you little think of. Those notes of hand, which you thought I took only to evade the law, fhall be paid to the laft farthing, if I am not chosen for nothing, next election. You shall find you have no fool " to deal with."

Juft as he faid this, he received notice that his coach was ready, and the landlord's daughter coming to with him a good journey, he faluted her politely, and flipping a couple of guineas (one of which I was) into her hand, to buy a ribbon, left the houfe like a man of honour. have not entered particularly into the circumstances of electioneering. They are too gross to give pleasure; and too well known to require repetition even to you. The effects, I mean immediately in the place, were fuch as reason may suggest to you. The electors, instead of making any advantage of the price for which they thus had literally fold their confciences, liberties, and properties, continued to wallow in drunkenneis, till every penny of it was spent, after which it was so long before they could fettle rightly to work again, that it required a year's hard labour and ftarving to repair what they fuffered by this boat of excels and idlenels. My new miltrefs was what is not unjustly called the idol of an inn. Endowed by nature with prettinefs enough to entitle her

80

to flatter ;, and fufficient pertnels to make her a coquette, on her return from a boarding-fchool, where her natural talents were fo well improved by education, that the was thought fit to try her fortune in the world, fhe took her place in the bar, and flirted away with every gentleman that came to the house, in hopes of taking in some one of the number for marriage, as others in her way had The first paffion of the female heart is for finery, done. to the gratification of which girls feldom fail to apply all the money in their power. But though my miftreis was very far from being intenfible to this pallion, another fcarce lefs powerful with the fex took place of it at this time, which was curiofity.

A young officer, who had lately been quartered in the houfe, and made warm addreffes to her, had faid fo many fine things in praise of a certain book, called Memoirs of a Lady of Pleafure, that fhe refolved to fee it, and for that purpose applied at a circulating library in the town, the keeper of which told her, it was fo fcarce and valuable a book, that he could not poffibly procure it for her under a guinea. High as this price was, the would have found means to raife it, fo ftrong was her curiolity, had not the hurry of the election, which just then came on, taken up all her time. But every obstacle was now removed, and the very evening I came into her pofferfion, fhe muffled herfelf up in one of the maid's cloaks, and went for it as foon as it was dark, when I was the purchafe of this extraordinary bargain.

I fee you are fhocked at the difhonefty and wickedness of my new malter for hiring out at fuch a price, or indeed at any price at all, a book, whole obvious defign (and which it is too well calculated to accomplish) is to supplant every principle of virtue in the youthful mind, But the blame refts not folely upon him. The excuse, which the poet puts into the mouth of the apothecary for felling poilon, that, ' his poverty, but not his will con-Sented,' may with equal justice be alledged in palliation of a poor book feller's vending impious or immoral books, the poifon of the mind. For this reafon, as no penalty, P9

VOL. III.

374 ..

however fevere, may be fufficient to combat that neteffity, the most effectual way to prevent the vending of either poilon would be to prohibit all those, whose poverty might fubject them to fuch temptation, from trading in books or drugs of any kind; as it is most certain, that if there were neither poor apothecaries, nor poor bookfellers, the fale of both vicious books, and noxious drugs, would be much less extensive than it is, if it could not be totally supprefied; there being very few of the human species to entirely given up to a reprobate fense, as to murder either the foul or body of a fellow creature, merely for the pleasure of doing it.

It may be judged that I did not remain long in the fervice of this mafter. The next morning after I came into his poffeffion, he came to London, where he laid out all the money he had in the purchafe of a parcel of fuch books as he thought most likely to fuit the tafte of his cuftomers, without regard either to virtue or religion, on which occasion I changed his fervice for that of his bookfeller.

## CHAP. XLVI.

Account of Chryfal's new mafter, bis heroic fpirit, and refolution to pufb for a penfion or a pillory. Meeting between bim and a poet, subo turns the tables upon bim. A curious method of forming a judgment of a work of genius. Chryfal's mafter is beaten out of all bis art, and for once bought a book by quality, not quantity. The value of an author's name. Chryfal changes his fervice.

175

"This is very pretty, truly !' faid he, walking backward and forward in a chafe, 'that I should wait an hour for an " author. It was his bufinefs to have been here first, and ' waited for me ; but he is fo puffed up of late, that he has quite forgot himfelf. Bookfellers feldom meet with fuch infolence from authors. I fhould ferve him right, to go away and difappoint him. But would not that dif-' appoint myfelf more ! He is come into fuch vogue lately, ' that the best man in the trade would be glad to get 'him. Well ! if he does not do what I want, I know ' not who can ! Fools may be frighted at the thoughts of a cart's tail, or a pillory, I know better things. "Where they come in a popular caufe, nothing fets a ' man's name up to fuch advantage; and that is the first ftep toward making a fortune ; as for the danger, it is only a mere bug-bear, while the mob is on my fide. 'And, therefore, I will go on without fear, if I am 'not bought off. A penfion or a pillory is the word.'-

These heroic meditations were interrupted by the enterance of the author, who throwing himfelf carelefly into a chair, ' I believe I have made you wait,' faid he, ' but I could not help it. I was obliged to ftay to kick ' a puppy of a printer, who had been impertinent : as I am to meet company directly, fo let me hear what 'you have to fay."-" I thought, fir,' answered my master, with an air of offended importance, 'you had appointed me to meet you here on bufinefs, and bufineis, you know, cannot be hurried over fo foon.'-" Don't mention bufinels to me ! I hate the very name of ' it; and as to any that can poffibly be between you and " me, it may be done in five minutes, as well as five years: fo fpeak directly, and without further preamble, for all your fineffes could have no effect upon me, even if I " would fubmit to let you try them. "-" Fineffes, fir ! I don't know what you mean ! I defy the world to charge " me with having ever been guilty of any. The bufinefs I defired to meet you upon, was about a poem, I was " informed you had ready for the prefs, and which I " fhould be glad to treat with you for. - Well, fir! and

176

• what will you give me for it? Bequick; for I cannot • wait' to make many words.'--• What! before I have • feen it! It is impoffible for me to fay, till I have looked • it over, and can judge what it is, and how much it will • make!'--• As to your judging what it is, that muft de-• pend upon infpiration, which I imagine you will fearcely • make pretence. to, till you turn methodiff a leaft; but • for what it will make, here it is; and you may judge • of that, while I go down ftairs for a few minutes.' Saying which he gave him a handful of loofe papers, and left the room.

The first thing my master did, when left thus to form his judgment of a work of genius, was tomumber the pages, and then the lines in a page or two, by the time he had done which the author returned, and taking the papers out of his hand, 'Well, fir,' faid he, ' and what ' is the refult of your judgment ?'-- ' Why really, fir,' answered my master, after some pause, " I hardly know " what to fay. I have caft off the copy, and do not think it will make more than a fhilling, however pompoully " printed.'- " What you think it will make is not the s matter, but what you will give me for it. I fell my " works by the quality, not the quantity.'- ' I do not doubt the quality of them in the leaft ; but confidering · how much the trade is over-flocked at prefent, and what " a mere drug poetry has long been, I am a good deal at a lofs what to offer, as I fhould be unwilling to give you or any gentleman offence, by feeming to underva-· lue your works. What do you think of five guineas; " I do not imagine that more can be given for fo little; nor indeed should I be fond of giving even that, but in compliment to you. I have had full twice as much " for two, many a time,'-' Much good may your bar-' gain do you, fir; but I will not take less than fifty for " mine in compliment to you, or any book feller alive ; and fo fir, I defire to know without more words (for I told \* you before that your eloquence would be thrown away " upon me) whether you will give that ; as Io am in " hafte to go to company, much more agreeable to me • than e

177

than your's.'--' What, fir ! fifty guineas for fcarce five hundred lines ! Such a thing was never heard of in the trade.'--' Confound your trade, and you together ! Here waiter ! what is to pay ?'--' But, dear fir, ! why will you be in fuch a hurry ? Can you not give yourfelf and me time to confider a little? Perhaps we might come nearer to each other !'--' I have told you before, and I repeat it again, that I will have fo much; and that without more words.'--' You are very peremptory, fir; but you know your own value; and therefore, in hopes you will let me have more for my money next time, I willventure to give you your price now; though really, if it was not for your *name*, I could not poffibly do it; but to be fure that is worth a fhilling extraordinary I own.'

"Which is twelve-pence more than your's ever will be, unless to the ordinary of newgate. But, come, give me " the money ! I want to go to my company.'- " Well, " fir! this is a hafty bargain ; but I take it upon your word; and don't doubt but there is merit in it, to anfwer fuch a price. Satire, fir I keen fatire, and fo plain " that he who runs may read, as the faying is, is the thing ' now o' days. Where there is any doubt or difficulty " in the application, it takes off the pleafure from the ge-" nerality of readers, who will fcarce be fatisfied with " lefs than the very name. That, fir, is your great merit. ' Satire must be perfonal, or it will never do.'- ' Perfonal ! that mine never shall be. Vices, not perfons, " are the objects of my fatire, though where I find the former, I never fpare the latter, be the rank and cha-" racter in life what it will."

My mafter had by this time counted out his money (among which I was) which the author took without telling over, and then went to his company, leaving the bookfeller fcarcely more pleafed with his bargain, than mortified at the cavalier treatment he had met in making it.

CHAP. XLVII.

Some account of the company to which Christal's news master went. His behaviour to a young female, who accoiled 178

cofied him in bis way home. He takes her to a tavern for an uncommon purpose, where he treats her uncommonly, and goes home with her from as uncommon a motive. Account of what he fave in her babitation with the manner in which he behaved there. Hs takes another lodging for the whole family, where he leaves them abruptly, to fave himself and them trouble.

THE company to which my new mafter was in fuch hafte to go, confifted of a few perfons, whom a fimilarity of temper had linked in the closeft intimacy .-With these he spent the remainder of the evening, in a manner which few would diflike, though fewer still could approve it ; the fpirited wit and liveliness of their converfation gilding the groffeft debaucheries; at the fame time that the rectitude and fublimity of their fentiments, whenever their hearts could find opportunity to fpeak, made the vices of their practice ftill more horrible by the contraft. They broke not up, as it may be imagined, till nature funk under their exceffes, when my mafter, as he ftaggered home, was accosted by a female, who had something in her air and manner fo different from those outcafts of humanity, who offer themfelves to cafual profitution in the ftreets, that his curiofity was ftruck, and he stopped to take more particular notice of her. She appeared to be about fifteen. Her figure was elegant ; and her features regular; but want had ficklied over their beauty; and all the horrors of defpair gloomed through the languid finile fhe forced, when fhe addreffed him.

The figh of diffrefs which never ftruck his ear without affecting his heart, came with double force from fuch an object. He viewed her with filent compafion for fome moments; and reaching her a piece of gold, bade her go home, and fhelter herfelf from the inclemencies of the night, at fo late an hour. Her furprife and joy at fuch unexpected charity overpowered her. She dropped upon her knees, in the wet and dirt of the ftreet, and raifing her hands and eyes towards heaven, remained in that pofture for fome mements, unable to give utterance to the gratitude that filled her heart.

179

Such a fight was more expressive than all the powers of eloquence. He railed her tenderly from the ground, and foothing her with words of comfort, offered to conduct her to fome place, where the night get that refreshment of which the appeared to be in too great want.

" Oh, fir,' faid she, preffing the hand that had raised her with her cold trembling lips, ' my deliverer fent from heaven to fave me from defpair, let me not think of taking refreshment myfelf, till I have first procured it for those, whose greater wants I feel ten thousand " times more feverely than my own."-" Who can they " be?' interrupted he, with anxious impatience. · Can humanity feel greater wants than those under which " you are finking ?'- ' My father,' exclaimed fhe, burfting into tears, ' languishing under infirmities, acquired in the fervice of his country; my mother worn out with attending on him, and both perifhing of want, \* (heaven grant they are not already dead !) together with " two infant brothers, infenfible of the caufe of their dif-\* trefs, and crying to them for a morfel of bread, which "it is not in their power to give !'-- "Where can fuch a scene of wretchedness be hidden from relief? I will 'go with you directly : but ftop; let us first procure \* fome comfortable nourifhment from fome of the houfes \* which are kept open at this late hour for a very different purpose. Come with me, we have no time to lose.'

With thefe words, he went directly to a tavern, and inquiring what victuals were dreffed in the houfe, loaded her with as much as fhe could carry of the beft, and putting a couple of bottles of wine in his own pocket, walked with her to her habitation, which was in a blind alley, happily for her not very far diffant, as weaknefs together with the conflict of pations ftruggling in her heart, made her fcarce able to go.

When they can? to the door, the would have gone up first for a light, but he was refolved to accompany her, that he might fee the whole fcene in its genuine colours. He, therefore, followed her up to the top of the houle, where opening the door of the garret, the different

1

180

to him fuch a fcene of mifery, as ftruck him with aftonifument. By the light of a lamp, that glimmered in the fire lefs chimney, he faw lying on a bare bedftead, without any other covering than the relics of their own rags, a man, a woman, and two children fhuddering with cold, though huddled together, to fhare the little warmth which exhaufted nature ftill fupplied them with.

While he flood gazing in horror at fuch complicated wretchednefs, his conductrefs ran to the bed fide, and fall. ing on her knees, ' O! Sir! Madam!' exclaimed the, in rapture, ' Arife ! I have got relief from an angel of hea-" ven.'-' Take care!' answered a voice, the hollow trembling of which was fharpened by indignation, 'take " care it is not from a fiend of hell, who has taken ad-" vantage of your diffress to tempt you to ruin ! for with " whom elfe could you be till this time of night? But " know, wretched girl, that I will never eat the earnings of vice and infamy. A few hours will put an end to my " miferies, which have received the only poffible addition ' by this your folly.'- ' He must be fuch, indeed,' interrupted my master, ftill more struck with sentiments fo uncommon in fuch a fituation, ' who could think of tempt-' ing her in fuch circumstances to any folly. I will with-" draw, while you arife, and then we will confult what can " be fooneft done to alleviate a diffrefs, of which you ap-" pear fo undeferving.'-While he faid this, he took the wine out of his pockets, and giving it to the daughter, went directly down stairs, without waiting for a reply, and walking backward and forward in the freet for fome time, enjoying the fubliment pleasure the human heart is capable of, in confidering how he had relieved, and fhould further relieve, the fufferings of objects fo worthy of relief.

By the time he thought they might have learned from their daughter the circumftances of her meeting with him, and taking fome nourifhment, he returned to them, when the moment he entered the room the whole family fell upon their knees to thank him. Such humiliation was more than he could bear. He raifed them one by one, as faft asohe could, and taking the father's hand, ' Gra-

cious



181

cious God!' faid he, ' can a fenfe of humanity betuch. ' an uncommon thing among creatures who call themfelves human, that fo poor an exertion of it should be " thought deferving of a return proper to be made only to heaven! Opprefs me not, fir, I conjure you, with the " mention of what it would have been a crime I could ne-' ver have forgiven myfelf to have known I had not done. ' It is too late to think of leaving this place before to-"morrow, when I will provide a better, if there is not " any to which you choose particularly to go. I am not 'rich; but I thank heaven that it has bleft me with 'ability and inclination to afford fuch affiftance as may <sup>e</sup> be immediately neceffary to you, till means may be <sup>e</sup> thought of for doing more.<sup>•</sup>—<sup>e</sup> O, fir,<sup>•</sup> aniwered the mother, ' well might my daughter call you an angel of " heaven ! You know not from what milery you have al-" ready relieved"- " Nor will I know more of it at this ' time,' interrupted my mafter, ' than that which I too ' plainly fee. I will leave you now to your reft, and re-" turn as foon as it is day."

<sup>6</sup> Speak not of leaving us, fir,' exclaimed the daughter, who was afraid that if he fhould go away, he might not return. <sup>6</sup> What reft can we take, in fo fhort a time? <sup>7</sup> Leave us not, I befeech you: leave us not in this place! <sup>9</sup> —Ceale, my child!' interpoled the father, <sup>6</sup> nor prefs <sup>9</sup> your benefactor to continue in a fcene of milery, that <sup>mult</sup> give pain to his humane heatt.'—<sup>6</sup> If my flaying <sup>will</sup> not give you pain,' anfwered my mafter, <sup>6</sup> I will <sup>will</sup> not give you pains,' andward to happier days. <sup>6</sup> There will be time enough hereafter to look back.'—

Saying this, he fat down on the bed fide, (for other feat the apartment afforded not) between the hufband and wife, with whom he fpent the little remainder of the might in fuch difcourfe as he thought molt likely to duvert their attention from their prefent milery, and infpire their minds with better hopes, while the children, all but the daughter, who hung upon his words, confrorted at heart with a better meal than hey had long tafted, fel VOL. III. Q

182

falt afleep, as they leaned their heads upon their mother's lap. As foon as it was day, 'Now, madam,' faid my mafter, addreffing himfelf to the mother, 'I will go and ' provide a place for your reception, as you fay all places ' are alike to you. In the mean time, accept of this tri-' fle,' giving her ten guineas, ' to provide fuch neceffa-' ries as you may indifpentibly want before you remove. ' When you are fettled, we will fee what further can be ' done. I fhall be back with you within thefe three ' hours at moft.'

For fuch beneficence there was no pofibility of returning thanks; but their hearts fooke through their eyes, in a language fufficiently intelligible to his. Departing directly, to fave both himself and them the pain of purfuing a convertation that grew too diffretsful, he went, without regard to change of drefs, or appearance, to look for a proper lodging for them; where he laid in fuch provisions of every kind, as he knew they mufi immediately want. This care employed him till the time he had promifed to return, when he found fuch an alteration in the looks and appearance of them all as gave his heart delight.

" You fee, fir,' faid the mother, as foon as he entered, " the effects of your bounty ; but do not think that vanity ' has made us abufe it. These clothes, what we could " raife on which has, for fome time, been our fole fup-" port, were the purchase of happier times; and were now " redeemed for much lefs than we must have given for the " worth we could buy.'- " Dear madam,' interrupted my mafter, taking her hand respectfully, ' mention not any ' thing of the kind to me, I beleech you. You will foon " fee such times again.'- Then turning to her hufband - I have taken a lodging, fir,' continued he; 'it is · convenient, but not large, as I imagined would be your choice. I will call a coach, to take us to it directly. " If there are any demands here, let the people of the . house be called up, and they shall be paid. . I will be " your purfe-bearer tor the prefent."-" No, fir,' replied the hufb and, ' there are not any. You have enabled us

1

to

183

to difchage all demands upon us. People in our circumftances cannot find credit, becaufe they want it.

My malter would then have gone for a coach, but the daughter infifted on faving him that trouble ; upon which he put the whole family into it, and walked away before them to their new lodging. It is impoffible to defcribe what these poor people felt, when they faw the provision he had made for their reception. The father, in particular, could not bear it, but finking into a chair, ' This is ' too much !' faid he, as foon as a flood of tears had given vent to the fullness of his heart. ' This is too much. Support me, gracious heaven, who has fent " this beft of men to my relief; fupport me under the weight of obligations, which the prefervation of these ' alone,' looking round upon his wite and children, ' could ' induce me to accept.'- Then addreffing himfelf to my master, 'My heart is not unthankful,' continued he. but gratitude in fuch excels as mine, where there is no " profpect of ever making a return, is the levereft pain." My mafter, who fought none, attempted often to give the conversation another turn; but, finding that they could speak or think of nothing else as yet, he took his leave, promifing to come the next day, when their minds fhould be better fettled, to confult what more was in his power to ferve them, having first privately taken an opportunity to flip a couple of guineas into the daughter's hand, to avoid putting the delicacy of her father and mother to further pain.

#### CHAP. XLVIII.

Chryfal gives fome account of bis mafter. Reafon of bis baving been bred to, and milcarried in a particular profellon. Interesting remarks on the different kinds of merit accellary to ominence in different profellons, contirmed by firking inflances of their fuccels in each. Natural conjequence of his being forced into a profellon against bis inclination. He is compelled by differs to exert his aviities. Contradictions in his character, and the particular turn of bis works accounted for. He wishts bis new family. Affeding story of an afficer. FATIGUED Vol. 111, O 2

184

TATIGUED in mind and body, from the debauch I the evening before, and the height to which his tendereft paffions had been wound up by fuch a moving fcene, my mafter went directly home, and throwing himfelf on a bed, flept till next morning, without disturbance from pain or reflection. The contradictions which I had feen in his character prompted my curiofity to take this opportunity of looking back to his past life, to try if in the occurrences of that I could trace their caufe. Born in the middle rank of life, his parents were induced by the dawnings of uncommon genius, which he difcovered in his earlieft youth, to give him fuch an education as might enable him to make that figure in fome of the learned profeffions, for which paternal fondness flattered them, that nature had defigned him. But, however greatly he profited by his education, the end proposed by it was far from being pleafing to his inclinations, which the vigour of his mind and body turned to more active fcenes. For this reafon, when he was to quit the purfuits of general learning for those of some particular profeffion, his ardour cooled, and he entirely loft that fpirit of emulative ambition, which alone can enable a man to arrive at eminence. Such a falling-off could not escape the anxious obfervation of his friends, but as it was not in their power either to remedy it, or gratify his inclination in any other way, all they could do was, to enter him into the fervice of religion, a profession in which, though the greatest abilities and application of the human mind are evidently and indifpenfibly neceffary, yet, by the perversion of man, the least are required.

You feem thocked at the feverity of this remark; but a moment's reflection will open to you the reation upon which it is founded. In every other profeffion, fucces depends upon an opinion of that knowledge, which is called merit in it, becaufe mankind fee the neceffity of fuch merit to attain the object of the profeffion. But in the church, the cafe is quite different. Every man thinks that he knows enough of religion to ferve his own turn, and therefore gives himfelf no trouble about the know

ledge

183

ledge of those who profess it, as he concludes that knowledge can be of no fervice to him ; and therefore fuccefs in the church depends not on a general opinion of merit, but on particular favour, which, for the reafon given before, is not the neceffary confequence of fuch merit. An attorney, or furgeon, for inftance, who is not thought to have fome merit in his profettion, will never be employed ; but let him by any means get into the church, and curry favour with those in power, and he may rife to the first dignities of it, though he has no more merit in this profession, than he had in that which he was forced to quit for want of bread. And this is the reason why they who have least abilities for any profession are packed into this; and why they, again, who have the least of thefe, are generally most fuccessful in it ; as confcioufnefs of their want of merit makes them take most pains to gain favour. The confequences of his entering into fuch a profession against inclination are obvious. An indignant fense of his own natural superiority to his fuperiors in station, made him fall into the too common error of arguing from the abuse, against the use, and hold in contempt not only them, but also the very profession itfelf, in which they could have fuch fuccefs, and in which necessity alone obliged him to continue. He difdained to apply abilities, which he thought above the end ! He neglected duties which he faw abufed ; and at length funk into a ftate of liftlefs indifference, in which he would have died in obfcurity, had not diffrel's rouled him, and extorted an exertion of his abilities, which a mind foured by difappointment of its earlieft hopes, and by domeffic unhappinels after, turned to fatire, with an alperity and firength that made vice tremble in the bofom of the great, and folly hide her head in the highest places. As this domestic unhappinels was the immediate caufe of those parts of his conduct which contradicted the general tenor of his character, justice requires that fome account should be given of it. In the capricious levity of youth, he fixed his inclinations on autemale, who had no other recommendation belide beauty. Pru-YoL. III. dence

186

dence would have forbidden a match, in which there was fo little prospect of happines, but men of great abilities too often think it beneath them to liften to her voice. He married her, though, in the phrase of the world, evidently to his ruin, the return fhe made him for which proof of his love, was, infidelity to his bed. This is the deepest wound that can be given to an heart of any delicacy ; it fharpens the fting of ingratitude with infult, by giving a preference that reflects difhonour. He felt it fo feverely, that defpair made him frive to drown the fenfe. of it in wine, in the intoxication of which, he too often was guilty of what, in a cooler moment, his reafon would have blufhed at, and his principles abhorred; and this was the chief caufe of that diffrels alfo, which, as I obferved, forced him to exert his abilities, which he did with fuch fuccefs, as foon enabled him to quit a profession that had not been his choice, and at the fame time indulge the natural difpolition of his heart, by practing fome of the fublimeft duties of it.

As foon as he awoke next day, he went to vifit his new family, where the happiness that gliftened in every grateful eye, at his approach, made him happy. After fome general chat, 'It is my duty, fir,' faid the father, 'to give 'you fome account of myfelf, and of the caufe of my ' falling into that depth of milery, from which your ' beneficence relieved me, that you fhould not think it . has been lavished on objects altogether unworthy of it. " I am defcended from a good family, the fortune of " which my father diffipated in fupporting a parliamen-' tary interest for the ministry, the only return he re-· ceived for which, and for his voice upon all occations, " was a fmall penfion for himfelf, and a pair of colours in " the guards for me, his only fon, with promifes, indeed, of further provision, which were all forgotten when he died, happily for himfelf before the end of the parlia-' ment, which, as he had no prospect of being returned again, would have left him at the mercy of creditors, " whome it was not in his power to pay. Though I was ' foon fenfible that my beft hopes died with him, I was 6 10

187

fo infatuated to a profession, the most pleasing to youthful idleness and vanity, that I laid out the little fortune of this belt of women, whom I had married in my days of better hope, in the purchase of a company, in ' a marching regiment ; at the head of which I flattered ' myfelf that I should meet fome opportunity, in the war ' just then broke out, of meriting further promotion. But I found the vanity of fuch a thought when it was unhappily too late. After feveral years careful fervice, ' in the courie of which I had fealed fome degree of re-' putation with my blood, in feveral warm actions, without advantage to myfelf, or prospect of any to my fa-mily, who now multiplied the cares of life ten thoufand fold upon my head, I was driven by defpair to exchange my company, which I had bought, and therefore could have fold again, the price of which would at leaft have kept us from abfolute ftarving, for an higher ' rank in a younger regiment just then ordered on an ex-' pedition, the object of which raifed what was thought " rational expectation of fuch profit as fhould eafe me ' from the anxieties that made life a burthen. Allured ' folely by this expectation, I went accordingly. The expedition was fuccefsful. I did my duty. I was wounded in the course of it, to the extreme danger of "mylife. I entirely ruined my conftitution by the fe-" verity of the climate; and on my return home was re-" duced to half-pay, without receiving fo much prize-" money as defrayed the extraordinary expences of the exe pedition, and of the illnefs which I contracted in it; while those above me accumulated fuch wealth, as, if divided in any degree of proportion, would have recompenied the labours of us, who had literally borne the heat and burthen of the day, and were now pining 'in difcontent and mifery, aggravated by a partiality fo feverely injurious. In this fituation, I refolved to " throw myfelf at the feet of my fovereign, and implore ' relief from the known goodnels of his heart. But his " throne was furrounded by those, whole integent it was to · keep

188

keep the cries of his people from coming to his ears \*;
 and therefore, as it was neceffary for me to make my
 errand known, I never could obtain access to him.

. The diffrefs of this difappointment was still further \* heightened by the delays in the difcharge of that halfpay, which was now my only fupport; and the drawbacks it was jubject to from the fees of office, even " when it should come to be paid, which were such, that " when I attempted to mortgage it, the wretch's laft refource, to put off ftarving as long as he can, what I · could get from those vultures, who fatten upon the fufferings of a foldier, was fcarce fufficient to fatisfy ' our prefent wants. How, then, could I look forward for a family, dearer to me than life ? What could fup-· port refolution, when hope was gone? Mine was unequal to the trial; and I was beginning to meditate on putting an end to a life of fuch mifery, without con-. fidering that the fufferings of those, for whom I felt 6 fo much more than for myfelf, must be still made hea-" vier by fuch a bale defertion of them, when heaven, in ' its mercy, vifited my family with a violent fever, which freed me from further fears for the future welfare of my " three eldeft fons, and with difficulty fpared the two, whom you fee before you. Oh ! my poor boys! happy! " thrice happier than us, whom you left behind ! Excule " this weaknefs, fir! nature will force the involuntary ' tear, in spite of reason; for were they not the children of my love? During their illnefs, I loft every other ' care in my attendance upon them; nor omitted any " poffible means to preferve lives, for which my fears · foreboded nothing but unhappinels ; but, though their ' deaths freed me from a part of those fears, they left a " melancholy void in my heart, which was more painful, ' if poffible, than any fear. But I was not long tenfible ' of that pain. My children were fcarce laid in the grave, "when the fever feized myfelf with fuch violence, that I " loon loft my fenfes, nor recovered them for above a \* This reflection, notorioully fo groundless, is alone fufficient to vindicate the author from any filution to prefent times.

f months

month; and then only to feel the greateft wretchedreis,
that was ever heaped upon human creature.

189

' The expence of my children's and my own illnefs had ' not only exhausted all the money I had raifed on the anticipation of my half-pay, but also obliged my wife ' to mortgage feveral of our beft effects. Such a refource ' never eleapes the watchful eyes of people who keep ' lodging-houfes. Our landlady no fooner perceived it, than fhe feized upon the reft, and then turned us out, the moment I could be removed without inftant death. In this stuation, I must have perished in the fireet, had not a poor woman, whom my wife had been obliged. ' to call in to her affiltance when I fickened, fhared with 'us her habitation, in which you found us, as the alfo did the earnings of her daily labour, till a chairman; who was carrying a beau to a ball, threw her down " with fuch violence, for not making hafte enough out of his way, that fhe broke her leg, and was obliged to be taken to an hofpital. From that time we supported 'life by mortgaging the few clothes we had brought ' upon our backs, without one ray of hope to tempt us to look forward, till they also were all gone, and the ' mifery of cold added to that of hunger. In this con-" dition we had been two days without tafting bread, or " feeling the warmth of fire, calling inceffantly upon death to put that end to our diffreffes, which a fenfe of " religion, made ftronger by my wretchedneis, now pre-' vented my daring to haften, when my daughter ftole ' out unknown to us, to feek for charity in the freets, " where the wandered, without meeting any thing but 'infults, and folicitations to vice, till heaven directed ' your fteps to her. Such was the reward of more than " twenty years faithful and hard fervice, in which I had fought the battles of my country, in the oppofite ex-" tremities of the globe, with honour, and been inftru-' mental in making princely fortunes for the feveral com-" manders under whom I ferved. This, fir, is the fum " of my ftory, in which I have been as brief and could, ' to avoid giving you pain. We are now your creatures. · The

100

The lives we enjoy are immediately the gift of your benevolence—a benevolence to critically timed (for we could not have fubfifted many hours longer without it) as to raife a hope, that providence, which fent you to our relief, will not leave its work unfinified, but fave us from falling again into fuch mifery, by means agreeable to its own wildom and goodneis, though impofilble for us, in our prefent fituation, to forefee.

It was fome time before my mafter, who had liftened to the officer's flory with fympathetic attention, was able to fpeak. Recovering himfelf at length, 'Fear not,' faid he, in a broken voice, 'never were abe righteous 'forfaken; nor-nor-nor-. I have fome friends, fir, ' who may ferve !--In the mean time take this,' reaching him a bank-note for twenty pounds, 'I will not be ' refufeld' bufinets calls me for a few hours; but I will ' fee you again in the evening.'-Saying this, he hurried away, to hide his emotions, without waiting for a reply, which, indeed, their gratitude left them not the power to make.

## CHAP. XLIX.

Chryfal's mafter carries him to wifit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character, on hearing the officer's flory, and furprifes Chryfal's mafter with an account of his having turned patriot. The general matives for fuch a flep ; wouth fime remarks on the difference between practice and profession, in different instances. Insignificancy of private characters in attacks upon a' ministry, and why. Reflections on the origin and use of fature, and the abuse of the terms good and ill-nature, with the reasions why so many cry out against fature. Chryfal changes his fervare, in a common way.

THE most intimate acquaintance my mafter had, was the perfon who had been competitor with a former mafter of mine, for admiffion in the higher order of the muck-monafery. To him he went directly, and relating the officer's flory, while it was fill warm on his heart, affect his affiftance to do fomething more effectual for his relief, His

IQI

His friend was fo affected with the melancholy cale, that it was fome time before he could fpeak; but when at length he did, it was in a ftrain very different from what might have been expected. . And the girl was " really to pretty !' faid he, with a look of inexpreffible archnefs. 'Well faid, my good Levite. I prefume you' ' latisfied your own appetites with her at a tavern, be-· fore you provided for those of her family ; though you ' lunk that part of the ftory, for fear I should want to come in for a fnack with you. The concupifcence of 'you parfons is truly catholic, whatever your confci-' ences may be, and would engrois the whole fex, if it " was not reftrained ; not indeed that women come within ' the meaning of the mortmain acts; as none do more 'good in their generation, and confequently are better " reprefented to the ftate, than those who are occupied by " the clergy.'- " Why, what a fenfual brute you must be," answered my master, ' to talk of fatisfying appetites with " a wretch just perifhing with cold and hunger. But it ' is all affectation. If you had been in my place, you " would have acted just as I did; for, whatever airs your "wicked wit may affume, I know your heart is ftrongly ' fulceptible of charity.'- ' Charity ! Ha ! ha ! I " expected that. It is always the burthen of a parion's fong. They make a cloak of it upon all occasions; ' and, indeed, if it will really cover fins, as they fay, " they are in the right to have it ready, for multitudes enough they have, to take up every corner of it. But, " why can you not throw off the cant along with the cloth ? " However, that her hunger fhould not damp your defires ' any more, here,' giving him half a dozen guineas, ' is " my help to allay it."- " I will not refuie your money, for your own fake, in hopes that your beltowing even " this much to well may help to atone for fome of the ' many thousands you have thrown away. . But it was ' not with any view of getting it that I fpoke to you .---"Their immediate necessities are supplied I want your 'affistance and intereft.'-' My intereft ! Ha loha ! ha ! ' You apply to a perion of great interest, truly. Why, s my

" ney very naming them would be fufficient to ruin their hopes for ever. You don't know, perhaps, that I have turned patriot, and attacked the miniftry."

193

Patriot ! for heaven's fake how long, and on what " occasion have youtaken this ftrange whim ?'- "Whim! · Pray, good fir, speak with more respect of the noblest " principle of the human heart. The thought came into " my head the night before laft; and as I do not love to " lofe time, efpecially in things of fuch moment, I gave ' it vent yesterday, in the shape of a political pamphlet, ' in which I have proved to a demonstration, that the " minister and all his friends and countrymen are fools and " rogues, and deferve to be hanged."-" Is it possible that 'you can be ferious ! What, in the name of common fiente, could be your motive for taking fuch a ftep as " this? I thought you had expectations of favour from " them.'- ' What motives fhould any man of honour and " honefty have, but the good of his country ; their negflect of which has roufed an indignation that will make " them tremble.'- " Or, in other words, they have difappointed your expectations, and, therefore, you take this " method of being revenged on them, and extorting, for fear, what they would not do from favour ; the general " motive of modern patriots, I acknowledge; but with ' what face can you pretend to the title, proftituted as it ' is, I cannot think, as your very name is a burlefque upon " every thing that is ferious."

<sup>6</sup> Pray, how fo, reverend and grave fir ? If the moft profligate finner makes the belt faint, as you fay, why fhould not a moderate rake make a tolerable politician ? I believe you will hardly attribute it to the fuperior excellence of the latter character ? but the truth is, though it is impoflible for me to profes political principles more contrary to my practice, than your moral practice is to your preaching, yet you would deny me the toleration which you avail yourfelf of, and have my words judged from my actions ; not my actions from my words, as you expect your own fhall be. But my private chair factor or practice fignifies nothing to this undertaking, "which

OF A GUINEA. which is to rip up the practices and characters, public and private, of a fet of people who have obtruded themfelves into a flation that exposes them to envy, and every acculation against whom will, therefore, be received implicitly, without regarding who or what the author of 'it is. Not but there is fufficient room to attack thefe, "whofe whole private lives have been fuch a continual · feries of vice and folly, and their public conduct of blunders and villany, that it is impoffible to fay or think ' any thing bad enough of them, as I have already proved by inconteftible inftances in my pamphlet, and fhall by many more in the course of the undertaking. If the tables, indeed, fhould turn, and I get into their " place, then they may make the fame use of my character, and perhaps not without effect ; but at prefent it is " quite out of the queftion. And now that I have opened myfelf to you, I expect your affiftance, in return for " my confidence."

'Affiliance in politics! It is not in my power to give ' you any. I hate, from my foul, every political fystem ' under the fun, as a jumble of folly and villany (I mean " as they are carried into practice, not in their speculative " plans) and therefore never could throw away a thought " upon them."- " That fignifies nothing. Theaffiftance " which I want, you are well qualified to give. While I " detect their political blunders and villany, you shall lash " their private vices and follies, till we make them equally · ridiculous and odious to every man of fenfe and virtue ' in the nation ; a talk that will give you the pleasing op-· portunity of indulging that milanthropy, which infpires " the mule of a fatirift, and is militaken for virtue, be-' caufe it rails against vice; for, blazon it out as pom-' poully as you will, nothing but ill-nature can make a " man take delight in expoling the defects of others ; and the more forcibly he does it, the more powerful mult " that principle be with him. And by the fame rule, it ' is good-nature that makes a man fawn upon folly, and flatter vice; and conlequently, whoever does it, is vir-" tuous."- " A molt judicious way of realoning, truly : Vol. III. now,

194

" now, on the contrary, I think it a much more just con-· clusion, that they who treat vice with tenderness approve ' in their hearts, and would practice it if they could; and that they who expose its deformities and dangers " really deteft it, though they may fometimes, through " human weaknefs, fall into the practice. But I do not " wonder at your remark; it is an old and common one, · All who are confcious that they deferve the lafh defire \* to leffen its force ; and therefore derive fatire from ill-\* nature, in order to obviate the application of it to the · proper object; and falten upon the fatirift the fault, " which is in themfelves. And this abule of the terms good and ill-nature is the reafon why fome have been \* provoked to call the former folly. But, not to walte time in difcuffions, where prejudice only can find a doubt, I agree to your proposal with pleasure, and will " hold folly up to ridicule, and brand vice for detertation, " wherever you point them out to me, without regard to the rank or power of the perfon ; or to any imputations of mitanthropy, and ill-nature, which may be levelled at myfelf, to fhield against, and blunt the edge of my fatire; though I no more expect that I fhall be e able to reform the moral, than you the political conduct of the age. However, it is a duty to make the "attempt, be the fuccefs what it will. But, by the bye, \* are you not apprehentive that your undertaking may be " attended with danger ? The people in power will cer-' tainly be provoked; and power, you know, has long " arms, and will often reach over the fences of the law." ' I fear them not ' I have friends who are able, and " will defend the laws in me, while I keep within their " fence; one of the principal of whom, I expect every " minute to call upon me, to communicate matter, and ' confult upon another ftroke,'-' Then I'll take my · leave. You'll have things to talk about which you will ' not defire me to hear. Confpirators against the state al-" ways choose privacy."- " Conspirators against the state ! " Our coofpiracy, if fuch you call it, is for the ftate, against its work enemies, traitors to the trust repoled in · them,

195

them, and fools to their own true intereft, as members of " the community."- " All this I'll grant; and yes it is well if they do not find means to make themfelves pais for the flate, and of courie, you for the traitors against 'it. They who have the power, can eafily affume the ' name.'- As he faid this, a fervant brought his friend a note, who, upon cafting his eye over it, ' The gentle-' man I expected,' faid he, ' writes me word, that he is not very well this morning, and, therefore, defires to fee me 'at his houle. If you are going my way, I'll fet you 'down.'-' I thank you !' answered my mafter. 'But ambition does not rife fo high as that yet. I do not ' afpire to a pillory, or prifon, even in the caufe of my ' country. Shall we fee you at dinner ?'- ' Moft certainly ! ' but hold. Can you give me change for this note? I have ' not time to call upon my banker.'- ' I believe I can ; ' but then it must be with the help of what you have your-' felf given me for the officer ; like other bankers, who " make a parade of taking in charitable fub/criptions, at ' the fame time that they fupport their credit with the " money.'- ' That's right ! I'll mention him to the per-' fon I am going to. He has abilities to ferve him effectually; and I am fatisfied never wants inclination to do ' a generous action.'-My mafter then gave him the change of his note, among which I was, and took his leave.

## CHAP. L.

Chryfal fums up the character of bis late mafter. Different opinions for and againft the propriety and benefit of fatire. The former supported by good authority. Reafon of fome inconveniences attending the indulgence of fuch a turn. Character of Chryfal's new mafter concluded from a former fletch. He waits upon his patron. Character of him, with his motives for fach a patronage. He gives firsting reafons for objecting to fome parts of Chryfal's mafter's pamphlet, which the other makes fome weak attempts to windicate. Chryfal's mafter enjoys the pleafare of tracing his own fame. HE peculiar character of my late mafter made me feel regret at leaving his fervice, till, I should fee VOL. III. R 2 more

TOG

more of him. His abilities did honour to the age and country in which he lived ; and the exalted fentiments of virtue, which broke from him fpontaneoufly, in the genuine effusions of his foul, gave fufficient realon to judge, that his conduct would be entirely ruled by it, and his talents exerted in the more pleafing and extensive way of recommending it to imitation by difplaying all its advantages and charms, as foon as time fhould cool the feryour of his paffions, and apply its lenient balfam to the fores in his heart, the finart of which first gave him that poignant turn, and drove him for relief to excelles that too often drowned his better reafon, and led him into actions, which in a cooler moment he abhorred. In a word, his failings were the luxuriance of nature, as his virtues were her perfection As I have faid that he turned his poetical vein particularly to fatire, I fee your curiofity to know my opinion of the propriety and benefit of that manner of applying the powers of wit. But I have often told you, that I am not permitted to determine controverted points. Many, with a plaufible appearance of good nature decry it, as proceeding from a malevolence of difpolition, and tending only to Ipread the influence of bad example, by making it known, and harden people in vices they might forfake if not made defperate by detection ! Many with an appearance of virtuous indignation, vindicate it, as terrifying from vice, by flowing it in its native deformity, and correcting folly, by putting it out of countenance; which latter opinion is fupported by the authority of one of the most fensible, and best men of his age.\* But still the indulgence of this turn is attended with many inconveniencies and dangers, if it be not guided with the greateft care. That imaginary superiority, which the power of making another ridiculous or detefted

\* Would the anachronifm admit the fuppofition, the editor fhould imagine that the author here meant the writer of Lattors from a Perjuan in England, Sec. whole worst ye thefe, I tall the c edge of wit is turned on those who are justly the objects of idicule, wit is as great a benefit to prover life, as the lowerd of the magifitrate is to public.'--Letter 40. flatters

197

fatters a man with, is fo pleafing to the felf-love infeparable from human nature, that it requires uncommonmoderation to refrain from exercifing it upon improper occafions, and makes him prefumptuoufly conclude, that whatever happens to difpleafe himfelf in any particular is a just object of public ridicule and centure. An error, into which the impetuofity of my late matter fometimes hurried him.

I have given you a fketch of the character of my new mafter upon a former occasion +; to which I have only to add here, that a wanton abufe of uncommon abilities inverted the end for which they were given, making them difgraceful to himfelf and dangerous to his country, a licentious purfuit of every thing called pleafure having wafted his fortune, and driven him to the despicable neceffity of proftituting them to any purpose that might promise to retrieve his affairs. The gentleman whom he went to wait upon, the morning I came into his poffeffion, was one who had ferved his king and country with fidelity and fuccefs, while he was permitted to follow the dictates of his own reason in their service; but gave up the empty and difgraceful appearance of acting in it any longer, on finding his judgement difregarded, and himfelf defigned to be made only a cypher, to increase the consequence of another. The indignation, however, which had prompted him to take this ftep, led him not into those unjustifiable lengths which are too common on fuch occasions. He was faithful to his fovereign, though he had loft his favour ; and watched attentively over the interests of his country, though he was not permitted ro promote them. The only instance in which his conduct could possibly be centured was his patronizing fuch a man as my malter. But it is a maxim in human politics, that the end justifies the means, be they what they will. He wanted to be reftored to his former power; and thought this man's exposing the infufficiency of these who had supplanted him in it, the most likely way to effect that purpose. To this defire of power he was not flimulated by the usual methods of re-

VOL. III.

+ Vol. III. page 73-R 3 pairing

198

pairing a ruined fortune, or making a new family. Et wealth exceeded his very wifnes; and he already enjoyed the higheft honours he could afpire to: all he propoled was the glory of his fovereign, and the advantages of his country, which that entuthaftic ambition, from whence proceed the greateft actions, made him think himieff the most capable, and with to be the happy infrument of promoting.

By this genleman my mafter was received with that civility which is commonly miltaken for effeem. After fome general chat, on the occurrences and humour of the times, in which my mafter modeftly took to himfelf the merit of the people's difcontent at the thinifiry and their measures, as raifed folely by his pamphlet, 'I al-'low the good effects of it,' faid the gentleman, ' and " greatly approve the principles upon which it is written; ' but I much fear that your zeal has transported you too far. You should of all things have avoided involving " the mafter in your charge against the ministers ; because ' that alone can give them any advantage against you, " and is therefore what they always feigu, however un-' juffly, when they are attacked, in order to fcreen them-' jelves behind him. Befides, the character of a love-' reign is facred, and fhould never be treated but with ' the higheft refpect, efpecially when the virtues of the " man are fuch as would be respectable in any character."

Such difapprobation from his principal patron greatly difappointed my mafter, who was to little acquainted with his fentiments, as to think he bore refentment against his fovereign for the lofs of his favour, as well as against thole who had deprived him of it, and confequently would be pleated with any thing that might item to reflect difgrace upon him. Recovering himstelf, however, before his embarratiment was perseived, 'I imagined,' anfivered he, with his usual preferee of mind, 'that it was 'impolityle to accule me of direfpect to one, whom I have fludioufly fought every occation of praifing. As 'for what you take notice of, my charge is not perfor-'ally against him, but through him, against thole who

199

" had the baseness and infolence to abuse his goodness and " confidence in fuch a manner ; fo that I think it is im-' poffible to wreft it to the purpole you apprehend."- ' I ' wilh you may not be miltaken ; but I much fear that ' your argument will not have the weight you expect. · Praife, given with an air of irony, is the keeneft infult ; befides, in this particular cafe, the praifes you be-' flow upon his goodnels are all at the expence of his understanding. However, do not be dispirited at what ' cannot now be helped. As I think your intention was not in fault, you may depend upon my countenance and ' fupport, let what will happen.' This comfortable affurance reffored my mafter to his former fpirits : not defiring, however, to continue the conversation any longer upon that fubject, 'I have this morning,' iaid he, ' made " no inconfiderable addition to our force. My friend, " the poet, whole turn for fatire I have heard you fo " much admire, has promifed me to exert all his powers. ' in our caufe. He will attack the faults in their private, while I expole their public characters, and experience " has fhown that it is easy to overcome the minister, when the man is made ridiculous or octions.'- 'The former I'll " grant you ; but we have too many inftances in contra-· diction to the latter, to build much upon it. Howe-• ver, his powers are great, and may do much, if he will take care to avoid the rock upon which you have fal-· len ; and, therefore, I fhall be glad to attach him feri-' oully to us, especially as he does not feem to be utterly " void of virtue, notwithstanding the libertinism of his " conduct in fome inftances."

My mafter would not mits for avourable an opportunity of doing julitice to the character of his friend. Accordingly, he related the flory of the diffrefles of the officer and his family, and his generofity to them, in lo affecting a manner, that the gentleman directly gave him a confiderable fum of mondy, for their prefent relief, with a promife of providing for them himfelf, if he could not prevail upon those in power to do it. Pleafed with a luctels which he knew would be fooleasing to his friend, my mafter

200

mafter took leave of his patron, and let out to trace his own fame from one coffee-houle to another, and enjoy the applaules which the popularity and boldnels of his attempt procured him from the multitude, wherever he went; after which he repaired to hi, ufual haunt, where he dined, and fpent the evening in the ufual manner.

CHAP. LI.

Chryfal's mafter receives an unvelcome wifit, at an unjeafonable time. His extraordinary behaviour before his fuperiors. He is fent to prifon. Chryfal makes fame unpopular remarks on certain interesting fubjects. Conjequences of his mafter's imprifonment, with an account of his behaviour in it.

CONFIDENT as my mailer was of his fafety, he foon found that the fears of his patron were too just. He had fcarce laid him down to fleep, when his bed was furrounded, and himfelf made a prifoner by a number of fellows, who, under the fanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawlefs ruffians, breaking open his locks, rifling his effects, and fearching into all his fecrets. It was in vain for him to expostulate with such people against fo flagrant injustice, or claim the protection of the laws. They derided him, and all he could fay ; and having finished their work, dragged him away, with infults and abufe, to a magistrate, where he had the comfort of waiting a confiderable time in fuch agreeable company, before his worship was at leifure to ice him. But this, though deligned as an indignity, was of real advantage to him, as it gave him time to recover his fpirits, and collect prefence of mind for an interview of fuch importance. Accordingly, when at length he was admitted to the dread tribunal, inftead of shewing any dejection at the danger which feemed to hang over him, he behaved in a manner worthy of a better man, and a better caufe. He afferted the violation of the laws in his perfon with fo much refolution, and appearance of reason, and returned the infolence of office with fuch contempt, aniwering illufively to the infidious queftions put to hims and boldly demanding that right of being reftored

refored to his liberty, which was affured to every individual of the community by the effential principles of the conflictution, that his judges were flattled, and more than once wifhed they had left him unmolefted.

However, as there was no receding now, they concluded it to be their beft way to go through with what they had begun, and bear down opposition with a high hand; with which intent they fent him directly to prilon, in definance of all he could fay, where he was treated with uncommon feverity, and the method which the law provided for his being reftored to liberty eluded as long as poffible, by finefics which power only could fupport.

I fee yoy indignation at fuch an infringement of laws procured by the blood of myriads, and efablifhed by the molt folemn engagements human and divine, for the fecurity of the conunon rights of markind. The part which every man feels in fuch fufferings, on a fuppolition that they may poffibly one day fall upon himfelf, naturally intereffs you, as it did the multitude, in my mafter's cuafe. But when you come to examine coolly the manner of his being taken into confinement, which is what gives you fuch offence, it will not appear fo contrary to reason and judice, the foundation, and, as I may fay, foul of all laws, as popular opinion may prefume.

All power is delegated from the people for the mutual advantage of governors and governed. To fupport the use, and prevent the abufe of that power, laws are eftablithed by the content of both, which are to be the rule of their actions. But, as it is impofible for human wildom to forefee, and provide for every occurrence that may happen, there is effentially implied in the first truft a further power of applying unprovided remedies to unforefeen cafes, for the fastery and advantage of the whole. If it be objected, that thefe remedies may fometimes be impurious to individuals, by being injudicioully or wrongfully applied, the answer is obvious. The fufferings of a few are not to be fet in competition with the fastery of the many. Befide, if the remedies were new it to be ap-

201

202

plied, where there was a poffibility of a miftake, the evil might happen, in the time necessary for inquiry and deliberation. For, though penal laws are defigned only to prevent future by the punishment of past crimes; yet where tuch crimes, if committed, will exceed the reach of punifhment, and defeat the laws, the power of prevention muft be exerted earlier, to anticipate them before commission.

Without fuch power, the truft of government would be imperfect, and inadequate to the end; as, if no punifhment could be inflicted thus for prevention, but by prefcribed forms, human ingenuity, ever most fertile in evil, would devife expedients to evade it, till perpetration should fecure impunity, as I faid before, perhaps to the ruin of the flate. For these reasons, an extraordinary power must have been implicitly given, for extraordinary cafes, or the good of the community, which is the end of government, cannot be obtained. If this power, though, fhould be abufed, the facred ipirit of the laws of your happy country will lupply the inevitable defect of the latter, and grant redrefs to the fufferer, when a proper time comes for inquiring into the circumstances of the cafe; a redrefs which was not provided by the people\* the most jealous of their liberties of any who ever united themfelves into civil fociety, who, fenfible of the neceffity of fuch a refource, made it a fundamental rule of their government, on any occasions of uncommon difficulty or danger, to entruit the whole power into the hands of fome one perfon, whom they called DICTATOR, as his word was to be the law, without fubjecting him to control in the ufe, or account for the abufe of it, when his power fhould be at an end.

As foon as my mafter's imprifonment was known, the populace all took fire. They made his caule their own. They looked upon him as a martyr in the darling caufe of liberty. They infulted allegovernment, and committed exceffes every hour, infinitely more illegal, and dangerous to liberty, than that of which they complained



203

plained. In the mean time, his confinement was far from fitting to heavy upon him as might have been expected. Though he wanted the approbation of his own mind, and the enthulialin of the principles he profelled to fupport his refolution, and encourage him to look forward with hope, levity of temper fupplied the place of that refolution, and faved him from inking under misfortunes, by making him infentible of their weight. He rallied his juilors, mimicked his judges, tracked jefts upon his own undoing, and turned every circumfrance into ridicule, with fuch drollery and unconcern, as if he was acting the imaginary inferings of another, not actually fuffering himfelf. How long he would have been able to fupport that fpirit though came not to be tried.

#### CHAP LH.

Chryfal's mafter is wifited in prifon by his patron; and from subat motives. His conduct, on being fat at liberty, and the conjequences of it. Remarkable grounds on which he was fet at liberty, with a conjecture at the reason of fixing upon them. Chryfal makes an inquiry into certain matters much talked of, and little understood.

▲ S foon as his friends obtained access to him (for the great leverity of his confinement was the uncommon frictness of it) his patron went to see him. As I have taken notice of his difapprobation of what had brought my mafter into this fcrape, you are furprifed at his taking a ftep that seemed to inconsistent with his character. But his motives for it did honour to the man, however ftrange they may appear in the politician. He had admitted him to a degree of perfonal intimacy. He had approved of his engaging in a caule, to which he was himfelf attached most fanguinely, and he fourned to defert him in diffrefs, occationed by what he thought an error of his judgment, not a fault of his intention. Belide the confolation to himfelf, the honour of fuch a vifit was of the greateft advantage to my mafter's affairs; as is lightened the per-Ional prejudices against him, and gave a good opinion of a caule, which appeared to have the countenance of fuch a man. Intoxicated with the popularity he had thus acquired,

204

quined, which if rightly managed might have done great matters, he was no fooner at liberty, than he threw off all rettraint, and ran into fuch licentiouinefs, as in a thort time leffened its force, and loft him every trace of the good opinion of all who gave themfelves time to think of the caufes and confequences of fuch conduct. But his triumph was not long lived. He had been reftored to his liberty, not as a right common to all the members of the community, on a supposition of the illegality of the manner in which he had been deprived of it; but in confequence of certain immunities, annexed to a particular part of the legiflature, to which he belonged. Though the abilities and integrity of the n.agiitrate who made this diffinction were unqueltionable, fome perfons, who looked farther than the prefent moment, imagined they could trace it to a caule not commonly attended to. He had on former occalions been inftrumental in depriving fome people of liberty in the fame manner; to have condemned that manner therefore now, as illegal, would have been condemning himfelf; at the fame time, that upright obedience to the distates of his pretent opinion obliged him to fet him free. Such a difficulty mult have been diffreffing; but this diffinction delivered him from it, and enabled him to fave his credit, and confcience both; as those people had borne no part in the legiflature, and therefore had not been entitled to fuch immunity.

I fee your indignation arife at the thought, that in a country which boaffs of being governed by equal laws, any one fet of men fhould enjoy immunities denied to the reft; but that indignation proceeds from viewing the matter in a partial light. In the country where your lot has happily fallen, the end of government is better fecured by a division of its powers, than in any other under heaven. The great wildom of thole who made this division appears in the provisions made to preferge each part in it independent of the raft, the only means by which the divifion itfelf could be preferved. Now, as the executive power neceflary belongs folely to the prince, it was equally neceflary to fecure thole who bore a part with him in the legiflative

205

legislative from any undue exertion of that power, which might be attempted in order to break through that independence, and join the legislative to the executive; or, in other words, yeft both powers abfolutely, and without limitation, in the prince. And this was the readon of imminities fo much talked of, and fo little underflood.

If it be faid, that thefe immunities operate also against fellow-fubjects, from whom there can be no fear, and are fometimes (perhaps too often) abufed to difhonest ends, the answer must be fought for in the depravity of the human heart, which will pervert the beft inftitutions to the worft purpofes, and makes it necellary to preclude every exception, that it flould not be extended to ferve them. As for inftance, if the meaneft fubject of the ftate had a right to claim the affiftance of the civil power in every cate against any member of the legislature, while in his legiflative capacity, that right might be fuborned, or feigned, by the executive power in luch a manner, as to overturn his independency, and to prevent his difcharging the truft committed to him : for which reafon it is better that an individual should fuffer (to suppose the worst) than an opportunity be given for ruining the whole community; according to the known maxim, that an evil, which affects but one, is preferable to an inconvenience which affects many. And this immunity, which is really the fhield and fafety of the ftate, can never be invaded, but from a delign against the liberty of the state, nor abfolutely given up without giving up that liberty along with it; though the right may be waved in particular inftances, which appear unworthy of the benefit of it. To actions, criminal in their own nature, between individuals, or immediately dangerous to the flate, it was never defigned to be extended, as in fuch cafes it would have been deftructive of the end for which it was initituted. While my mafter was running riot in this extravagant manner, forse things happened which raifed in his favour the indignation and pity of many, who difliked the man, and disapproved of his proceedings, because they faw him perfecuted by unjuftifiable means. It may be imagined, Vol. III. 6

206

gined, that I did not remain long enough in his policifion to fee the conclusion of this affair; but, as I had ample oppertunity of being acquainted with it at the time, and fee that your curiofity is interceived in the event, I will continue the account here, effectively as the principal occurrences in my next fervice were connected with it in fo particular a manner, that it is neceflary to explain one, in order to underfland the other.

#### CHAP. LIII.

Chryfal's mafter takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national reflections, and attacks upon private characters. Chryfal's mafter is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper perfon, whom he treats with uncommon propriety. Chryfal makes fome out-of-theway reflections on a question much canvolfed to little purpole. WHEN my mafter had in fome measure exhaulted the first flow of his fpirits upon the recovery of his liberty, he made a short excursion abroad, as if merely for amutement, but in reality to provide a place of retreat, in cafe of the worft, as his apprehensions could not but be alarmed, whenever he allowed himfelf time to think.

I have observed, that in the account he gave my late master, when he first told him of his attack upon theminister, he faid he had included in it all his countrymen. This he really had done on that, and continued to do on all other occasions, with a licentiousness unexampled; but which loft its force, and became contemptible, by finking into fcurrility. Attacks upon private characters, unlefs forced by neceffity, or defigned to ferve good purpoles, fuch as perfonal reformation, or caution to others, are literally abuse, and proceed always from a bad heart; but national reflections, as they can answer no good purpole of any kind, are abufe in every lenle, and proceed equally from folly and malevolence. A folly, indeed, that is often punished by fools, who take to themselves that abuse, which belongs not to them in particular, and would pass by without lighting upon them, if not applied thus by themfelves.

My matter had not been long abroad, when a country-

207

man of the minister's thought proper to call him to account for the liberties he had taken with his country .--The abfundity of fuch a ftep in any man was ftill aggravated by the peculiar circumftances of this perfon, who had actually given weight to the feverest part of the charge against his country (indeed, othe only part that would admit of weight, the reft being, as I have taid, nothing but fcurrility) by engaging in the fervice of the enemies of its prefent government, and fighting their battles against it. Such an antagonist, therefore, was beneath the notice of any man of reason, and accordingly was treated fo by my matter, who on this occasion behaved with a onoral propriety and prudence much above the tenor of his general character. But his enemics beheld his conduct in a different light, and attributed to cowardice what was really the effect of courage.

You feem furprifed at my faying that his declining to fight was the effect of courage : but, reflect a moment, and you will fee that it is the motive of fighting, and not the mere fighting, that constitutes true courage; and that the fashionable courage of venturing life for punctilios of imaginary honour is real cowardice, as it proceeds folely from fear of the false centure of the world; and therefore, that to brave that cenfure in fuch cafes is the higheft courage. I would not be underflood by this, to declare abfolutely against a man's fighting in his own cause, in all cales indifcriminately. Different circumftances make an effential difference in things which fuperficially appear to be alike. A man's venturing his life, as I have laid, in vindicating empty punctilios of imaginary honour, or in fupport of injuffice, is the higheft and moft ungrateful infult to the author of that life, who has made the prefervation of it the first principle of action, and confequently an indifpenfible duty, when it can be preferved without violation of those greater duties which he has thought proper to preferibe.

But, as there are other things more valuable than life, because without them life would lose its value, reason, which is the voice of heaven, permits to hazand the leffer good

Vol. III.

208

good for the prefervation of the greater, and this is the juffification of war between different flates. To prevent the evils, which fuch a recourse between individuals in the fame ftate, must be attended with, laws are established to preferve those rights, and redrets injuries which they may offer to each other; to thefe laws, therefore, it is an indifpenfible duty to recur for fuch redrefs and prefervation, where they are able to effect them : but this, duty does not feem to extend fo far as abfolutely and indifcriminately to preclude the other method of a man's ftriving at the hazard of his life, to effect them himfelf, when the laws cannot do it, as is too often the cafe, it being impoffible for human wildom to make provision for every occurrence, which in the complication and extenfiveneis of human action may require it, An opinion fo contrary to that profefled by all who have undertaken to difcufs this fubject, however confonant to the fenfe of mankind in general, as thewn in their practice, thould be fupported by the plaineft and most convincing reasons.

A good name is the immediate jewel of the foul; it is the first fruit, and the reward of virtue : the prefervation of it, therefore, is indifputably worth hazarding life for, where the laws have not fufficiently provided for its defence; as is the cafe, in many of the most delicate and tender points. If a man, for inftance, is unjuftly acculed of a fact that ruins his good name, at the fame time, that the acculation comes not within the reach of any law, from which he may receive redrefs, can reafon fay, that he is not juffifiable in striving for that redrefs himself, and vindicating his good name, at the hazard of his life when that life would be only mifery without it ? But here another difficulty occurs. Shall a man, it is faid, put himfelf upon a level with his injurer, and rifk a fecond injury, in feeking fatisfaction for the first? This certainly is an evil, but must be fubmitted to, to prevent a greater. If a man were permitted to redress himfelf absolutely, without fuch a rik, the confequence fhould be, that par-

tiality to himfelf would make him think everything that fhould deplease him an injury sufficient to merit such a redress,

200

redrefs, whereby murders would be multiplied to the reproach of lumanity, and ruin of the flate. But where, this rifk makes the redrefs attended with danger, people are cautious not to run into it, but on what they at leaft think good grounds. Befides, rifking life in an even feale is in fome manner flaking it upon the juffice of the caufe, and appealing to heaven for decifion; and confequently fuccefs clears the character in general effimation; whereas killing infidioufly, or without fuch equal rifk, only confums the first charge, on a prefumption of confcioufnefs, and aggravates it with the weight of new guilt. And this was the fenfe of mankind, till the remedy was perverted to fuch an excefs, as to become worke than the evil, and therefore neceffary to be abolified, as far as human laws can abolifh a general principle of action.

One-particular, though, in the laws made to abolifh it deferves remark, as it flows a ftriking inftance of the fagacity with which human laws are often made. Killing a man in a deliberate duel, be the caufe ever fo important, and utterly unprovided for in the law, is accounted murder, and made capitally criminal; but killing in a drunken broil, or ungoverned guft of paffion is only a pardonable offence, and called by the fofter name of manflaughter ! Now, if the makers of that law had but confidered which action proceeded from the worlt caufe, and was liable to be attended with the worst confequences, from the poffible frequency of it, they might perhaps have feen reason to reverse the cafe, and made the latter capital, and the former at least pardonable. In a word, he who takes away the life of another, or lofes his own, in a trivial or unjust cause, or where the laws of his country have provided him redrefs, is guilty of murder ; whereas, he who kills, or is killed, in a coufe of real importance, for which there is no remedy provided him by the law, fins not against the spirit of that law, however he may against the letter 9 and consequently seems to be intitled to an immunity from the penalties of it. This reafoning, though, respects only the reason of the law, and is by no means laid down as a rule for practice ; it being the in-YOL. III. difpenfible 5.3

difpentible duty of a fubject to obey the plain letter of the law, without prefuming to oppose his private opinion to it, otherwise than by humble application to proper authority to have it altered.

210

#### CHAP. LVI,

Chryfal's mafter's late conduct draws him into a new forape, in which he comes off but fecond-beft. He takes advantage of his misjortune to make his eleane from a greater. He juffers the refentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him; and meets from his friends the fate of all ujclefs tools, after having ferved them with improbable fucefs. A firking inflance of the advantage of an upright judge, and equal laws. Chryfal changes his fervee.

THE opinion, that my mafter's having behaved in this manner proceeded from a want of fpirit foon laid him under a neceffity of fhowing the contrary. A perfon who was involved deeper than he chofe to appear in his acculations againft the minitler, though he was known to be his creature, though the might fafely invalidate the credit of the charge, and curry further favour with his patron, by denying it in terms of fuch abufe, as fhould make the acculter infamous, on fubmitting to them, as he imagined he would.

But in this he found himfelf miltaken. The capitouncer's of faile honour, that often paffes for true reiolution, which is the only relult of virtue, was now piequed y and two beings (for it was impoffible for the other to draw back) who called themfelves rational hazarded their lives, in fupport of what neither could have fupported by reafon. The event proved immediately unfavourable to my mafter, who received a wound, that for fome time feemed to threaten hio life. But he foon thought the danger amply made amends for, by the pretence it gave him to put off from time to time the relentment of that part of the legiflature to which he belonged, for the offence which had occafioned his being confined, and at length to fly from it, wher he found it could not be any longer prevented by fuch fineffes, from buriting on his

head.

211

head. Such a flight was an implicit acknowledgment of his guilt? He was, therefore, deprived of his part in the legiflature, and confequently of all the immunities annexed to it, and given up to the common courfe of the laws, for that and other matters, whenever he floud be found within the reach of their power. Nor was this all! To flow full ftronger ditapprobation of his conduct, the breach of thole immunities, upon which the magiftrate had founded his difcharge from confinement, was overlooked, and fuch offences as his excluded from their protection for the future.

You cannot be furprifed at his meeting fuch a fate. The tools of a flatefman, however fuccefsful they may have been, are always thrown afide with neglect; the moment they have done their work ; but when they fail, however blameleffly, or run into any error, though only from excels of zeal, the weight of the neglect is made ftill heavier, by heaping all the blame upon them. But what will you think, when I tell you, that, unequal as he must appear to have been to fuch an attempt, in confequence, character, and abilities, he railed to threatening a florm, that the minister thought proper to retire out of its way; as all his friends apprehended they fhould have been obliged to follow him : a foccels, for which he was in great measure indebted to the affiltance of my late malter, who represented their private characters in fuch colours, in his fatirical writings, as will make their memories pay a dear price for their power, the poetical merit of his works, in which their names are branded with indelible infamy, enfuring their immortality: Such is the bafis upon which fratefinen found their greatnefs; and fo eafily is a jealous populace led away, by any thing that flatters their prefent humour.

I tay not this, as deciding upon the menit of the difputes in which he was concerned. I think too meanly of human politics in general, to give my opinion in favour of any one ficheme of them, in preference to another.— They are all alike a jumble of villaw and blunders. All I intend is, to flow on what a fandy foundation men who value

213

value themfelves upon their wildom wear out their lives in allocius toils and dangers, to build their hopes; and what unworthy means are often made infe of to overturn them, and work ends, reputed great on purpole, perhaps, to humble man in his own eyes. As for my malter, he was no fooner removed out of the fight of themob, whole idol he had been in, fuch an extravagant degree, than he was entirely out of their mind, and the florm he had raifed fubfided fo totally, as to leave no other trace behind it, but his ruin.

I have observed your anxiety to know whether he ever obtained redrefs for the injustice done him in his property, and the injurious treatment he received when he was first apprehended, as I faid that the fellows employed to take him, had, under the fanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawless ruffians. The interest you take in the caufe of fuch a man can arife from nothing but your love of justice, which should not be violated in the perion of the most unjust. It will, therefore, give you pleafure to be informed, that the laws of your country never fhone with brighter luftre, than in this inftance .---In defpite of every artifice and effort which power and chicane could make use of to evade, or intimidate from, the execution of them (a ftriking inftance of the latter of which was depriving his patron of every degree of power and honour, of which he could be deprived without regard to his great fervices and perfonal confequence, only for appearing in his caufe) an able and upright magistrate fupported them with fuch refolution and judgment, that he obtained exemplary redrefs for all he had fuffered, that could be redreffed, as did feveral others, who had been involved in the fame circumstances, as having been employed by him. e

In gratification to your curiofity, I have thus given you the general heads of his flory. To have dwelt on the minuter circumflances, however curious in themfelves, would have led me too great a length, helides that they now confe within my dengn, as I was not directly in his polleflion when they happened. To return, there-

213

fore, now to the regular chain of my own adventures, I must go back to the time of my leaving his fervice, which was not very long after he had been releafed from his confinement. Among the crowds that came to congratulate him upon this event, was a clergyman, whole profettions of perional attachment, and relpect for his principles and abilities, were ftrained to fuch a fulfome height, as would, have difguilted vanity itfelf.

My matter faw through him directly, and played him off with humour peculiar to himfelf, till he concluded with telling him, that he had a work then in hand, upon the fame tcheme with his, which he intended to publifh by fubfeription. My matter, who knew the man, took the hint, in the proper light of a modeft way of begging, and clapped a couple of guines into his hand, defining to be interted in his lift, upon which occasion I left his fervice.

### CHAP. LV.

Reafon of the joy with which Chryfal was received by bis new mafter. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Conversation between Chryfal's majter and his guelt. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade. Chryfal's majter is encouraged by his friend from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain maiter that made much noife.

THE joy my new mafter felt on the receipt of to fmall a fum, fnowed the confequence it was of to him. He thanked his benefactor, in terms of rapture, and vowing eternal gratitude and attachment to him and his caule, departed with an happy heart. Nor was his joy without caule. He had invited an acquaintance to fup and ipend the evening with him, and had neither money nor credit to provide any thing for his entertainment. Defpicable as the vanity of making invitations in fuch circumfances may appear to you, it was one of his chief refources, to fupport himfelf and his family; as he never invited any, but fuch as he expected to borrow fuel more from than it coft him to entertain them. Your indignation at the mention of fo mean a flift fhows your happy ignorance

214

of the ways of this populous place, in which there are numbers, who keep up a decency of external appearance, and support life only by this method of raising contributions on their acquaintances, fpending with one what they have got from another, in order to get from him too, and fo on ; with this difference only from common beggars, that they feldom apply to the fame perfon twice, and inflead of praying for their benefactors with an appearance of gratitude, wherever they meet them avoid their company, and are always feeking for new acquaintances, as quarry for them to prey upon. On this errand he had fallied out this morning, but met with fuch bad fuccefs, that he had been obliged to have recourse to the fubfcription-fcheme, an addition which he had lately made to his former plan. His joy, therefore, at my late mafter's generofity was but natural. He returned home in high spirits, and giving his wife half his prize, to provide two or three nice little things, fecured me, for future contingencies. Every thing heing thus adjusted, his guest, who came punctually at the appointed time, was received with all the formalities and airs of politeness and high life. The conversation before, and at supper, ran on the usual topics, of the weather, politics, and the fecret hiftory of the day, but when my mafter's lady had withdrawn, and he faw his friend began to palate his wine with pleafure, (for he never made his pufh till the heart was warm) he took occasion from some modest mention the other made of his munificence in the relief of merit in diffrefs, to lament his own inability to indulge that darling pleasure of his foul, as a proper introduction to his bufinefs.

<sup>4</sup> I have wondered with much concern,' anfwered his friend, 'at your languifhing fo long in this obfourity. <sup>4</sup> It is all your own isolt. Why do you not exert your-<sup>5</sup> felf? There is nothing which fpirit and diligence cannot <sup>6</sup> conquer.'—' Very true, my deareff friend,' replied my mafter, with a flurug of his fhouldere, and a heavy figh. <sup>6</sup> But what can diligence or abilities either do, when they <sup>6</sup> cannot find employment. I have offered myfelf to <sup>6</sup> miniftry and oppolition, to book fellers and news-writers j

" and all to no purpose : though indeed if it was not for the affiftance of one of the latter, who now and then takes an effay or a letter from me, I should be utterly " at a lofs. So that what can I do ?'-

"What! why any thing rather than be idle. If one thing won't do another may. There is not an article in the trade which I have not tried in my time. I have ' made bibles, magazines, and reviews ; fermons, ballads, ' and dying speeches; and though all failed I never loft ' my fpirit. The mifcarriage of one fcheme only fet my " invention at work to ftrike out another. No man can have greater difficulties to ftruggle with than I had ; ' and yet you'fee I have got over them all,'- ' Yes ! but 'my dearest friend, you had advantages ! the counte-\* nance and affiftance of fuch 'a patron as your's !'-

"Were just as great advantages to me, as your patron's are to you ; and no more. I had the honourable advantage of leading a bear, for a bit of bread; and be-' traying his fecrets to his father and mother, for the hope \* of a church-living, which I should not have got at last, " but that it was not worth felling."-" You altonish me ! "Don't you owe all your preferments, all your afflu-\* ence, to the interest of your patron ?'-

"What I owe my preferments to is not neceffary to "mention; but my affluence I owe to a very different · caufe. The detection of that impostor was the thing " that made my fortune. I might have remained in my ' original poverty to this day, if it had not been for that.' "-For that ! Is it poffible? I cannot conceive that the ' profits upon the fale of a pamphlet or two (and that not " a very extensive fale neither) could do fuch great things. " My novel, I thought, bade as fair for a good run, as ' any thing : it was feafoned high to the tafte of the " times, and yet it did very little more than pay."

' The fale! Ha! ha! ha! No, no! I did not depend "upon that. My profit came in another way entirely." - What can be your meaning ? If it be not too great a fecret, I should be much obliged to you to explain this matter. It may poffibly be of service to me." · Why,

216

Why, on that account, and as I think I can depend upon your honour, I don't much care if Ido. If you s are io much furprifed at my faying that I made my fortune by that pamphlet, what will you think when I tell you further, that I never wrote one line of it, nor f was I any more concerned in the fale than you, who " knew nothing of the matter ? But not to perplex you s with gueffing at what it is impoffible you fhould ever dilcover. You can be no firanger to the noise that ' impostor made, when he first came here, While hedid ' no more than tell his own ftory, it was thought, by his fold fraternity to be the belt way not to give it confequence by contradicting it, but let it die away of itfelf; ' belide, that polibly it might not have been io easy to f contradict it to any effect, while the perfons concerned " were all living, and the facts fresh in every one's me-" mory. But when he went fo far as to attack the whole body, and was evidently undermining the foundation ' upon which they flood, by tearing off the veil of anti-' quity behind which they hid themfelves, and exponing all their mystery to light, the matter became more ferious, and it was judged necessary to ruin his character, ' in order to invalidate the credit of his work, the merit f of which made a direst attack not only difficult, but s alfo too doubtful of fucceis to hazard an affair of fuch · importance upon it.

<sup>6</sup> For this realon, heaven and hell were conjured up, and every engine let at work to prove his flory of himfielf fallie in every particular, and make him appear the most complicated villain that ever exited. But the credit of those who made this attack upon him wastoo low for it to have any effect, as their principles, and the interested motives upon which they proceeded, were fufficiently known, to that it only did him fervice, by fhowing his confequence. While they were confidering how to repair this defeat, needily fuggested to me the lucky thought of offering them my affittance. I had already got fome degree of credit by anticipating time in the detection of two filly importances, the abfundity

217

fundity of which would foon have differed them without my help. This gave weight to my offer accordty they readily embraced it and defining only the fanction of my name, (for which you may judge, I was well
paid) took all the trouble upon themfelves.

<sup>4</sup> The realon which defeated them affifted me. Every <sup>5</sup> thing I was thought to fay carried weight, as appearing <sup>4</sup> to proceed from the higheft candour, and attachment to <sup>5</sup> truth, as nothing elfe could naturally be fuppoied to <sup>5</sup> have made me take fuch pains to detect an impoflure, <sup>5</sup> fo favourable to the principles I profelled myfelf. The <sup>6</sup> public allo had got enough of his flory, and was ready <sup>6</sup> to liften to one againft him. The confequence you <sup>6</sup> know. His character was ruined with the public; and <sup>6</sup> of courfe a prejudice raifed againft his work, which <sup>6</sup> ruined that allo, without the trouble of a regular confu-<sup>6</sup> taion, which, as I observed before, might not have been <sup>6</sup> an eafy matter : and now I hope the myftery is explain-<sup>6</sup> ed to you.—

## CHAP. LVI.

Chryfal's mafter makes fome striking remarks on his friend's account of this mysterious transaction, and dravus inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious fong, who makes an important hit, just in his own character, upon it. Chryfal's mafter boggles a little at first, at his friend's proposal, but is encouraged by his example to undertake it.

AM much obliged to you, for fuch a proof of your confidence,' returned my matter, ' particularly, as it clears up fome points to me, which I own gave me equal concern and furprile; and of which delicacy prevented my defiring an explanation from you. Thele were the manner in which that attack was made upon him, and the arguments and proofs brought in fupport of it, which were fo unfair, inconclutive, and in many inflances contradictory, that I was attonifhed any man of fenfe and honefty could make use of, or be influenced by them.' — Why, that is very true. Their 'zeal often over-fhot the mark to be fure. But that fig-'VUL. III. T

218

. niked nothing. Set the public once upon the fcent of · fcandal, and they'll hunt it like blood-hounds, through . thick and thin. Nothing can be fo grofs as to flop them. "You may as well whille to the wind to change its ' course, as fpeak reason to the people, when they have conceived a prejudice.'-But what is your opinion of that affair? Is he, or is he not, the impostor they would " make him? For I confeis, the arguments by which · they would prove him one are fo far from answering their defign with me, that I think they prove the contrary, by proving nothing; as it is natural to conclude, that if there were any better, fuch would have not been made " use of. But you certainly must have had fufficient op-· portunities of being informed, in the intercourse you necefiarily had with them.'-' As to that, I know no " more of the matter than you do, nor ever gave myfelt · the trouble to inquire. All the intercourfe I had with " them, was only to fave appearances, and get my money. . Whether he was an impostor or not was the fame thing to me. I was paid for feeming to prove him one; " and that was all I cared for."- " But you continue to call · him one ftill. Do they also pay you for that now ?'-No. I do that for my own credit. Were I to retract, " all the fcandal that has been heaped upon him, in my f name, would revert upon myielf, fo that whenever I " mention him, I am obliged to do it in the old phrafe. "I know fome fqueamish people would have fcrupled " the whole ; but that is not my way of thinking. I hold " nothing to be fo great a reproach as poverty; nor any " thing a fin that can get over it. And fo, here's my fervice to you. I wish you could hit upon luch another " opportunity."- " And if I would foruple to make ule of it, may I perifh in my prefent poverty; and I defy the devil to find an heavier curfe.

The convertation then turned to more general topics, in the courie of which my late mafter naturally coming to be mentioned? 'That's right,' faid my mafter, 'I 'have fomed aing to fhow you, that will give you pleafure, 'You may remember, I told you, that I am fometimes 'obliged

219

obliged to a printer of my acquaintance for helping me to a job, in the letter or effay way. Happening to call \* upon him this morning, to try if he could take any thing • from me, he showed me this, \* pulling a piece of greaty paper out of his pocket, ' which I think really a curiofity. It is a proof of a bawdy fong, which the gentleman we have been talking of wrote, and had a few copies of printed for the anufement of his particular intimates. ' My friend got it from one of his-journey-men, who fometimes works for that gentleman, and fays there are ' a good many more of them, which are all printed toge-" ther in a ballad. You'll find it worth your reading. " Nothing ever was to highly worked up. It gave me inffable pleature.'- If you can prove this to be wrote by that perion,' (taid the other ipitting, and wriggling in his chair, after having poured over it for fome time) ' your fortune is made ! You know his enemies are ftriving to run him down, by any means. Now, this will " give them to plaufible an handle against him, that they will not fail to reward you liberally for the difzovery. " All you have to do is, to prove it plainly upon him."-' I am pretty fure that may be done;' antwered my mafter, with fome hefitation, ' But I-I-I-I hardly 'know how .- I am under perfonal obligation.'- ' Nay, if ' you let fuch things as that interfere, I give you up. "What fignifies past obligation, when put in competition " with prelent intereft ? You know what my old anta-' gonift lays, that it is a rule among his former fraternity " never to let any focial or moral duties interfere with re-· ligion, of which he gives a remarkable instance in his 'own ftory. Now, my interest is my religion ; and every " thing which interieres with that I abjure; as I have ' fufficiently proved. But I begapardon, I would by no " means preis you to do any thing against your confcience, " if it is fo tender.'- Wrong me not, my dearest friend by fuch an opinion : my conficience is as far from being tender as your's can be. I was only furprifed that I ' had not myfeif feen what you mentioned. But now " that your friendship has pointed it out to me, you shall VGL. III. · fee

• ice me purfue it as eagerly as you can defire. All I • want is your direction! Leave the reft to me."

220

The remainder of the evening was (pent in confultation upon the plan proper to be purfued, the former of which my mafter fubmitted implicitly to the fuperior judgment and experienceof his friend, who was fo pleafed with this mark of his refpect, and to fure of fuccels, that on going away he took a modeft hint, and lent him five guineas, reminding him at the fame time of the confidence he had placed in his honour, by difelofing his affairs to him, and enjoining him to fecrefy.

## CHAP. LVII.

Chryfal's mafter purfues his feheme, and Diolates moral houefly to ferve the caufe of wirtue and religion. He waits upon his patron, who honefly refufes a charafter to which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably affilid by another perfon of lefs modefly, who pleads the caufe of religion and wirtue in wain, till honour at length turns the feale in their favour. Chryfal's mafter is difappointed in his hopes, and makes ufe of an expedient in charafter, to gleape from the juft reward of all his labours. Chryfal ehanges his fervice.

NOT to lofe a moment's time, in a matter of fuch importance, my mafter went next morning to his worthy friend the printer, to whom he opened his icheme, and by his influence, with the affiftance of the bribe, and promifes of much more, he prevailed on the fellow from whom the former paper was got, to betray the truft of his employer, and steal the whole ballad. The next thing was to make his honeft acquifition known to those from whom he expected the reward of his pious pains. For this purpole, he waites upon his patron, and having with difficulty gained access to him, on repeated meffages of important buline's after the common cant of compliments, ' I am come, fir,' faid he, ' on an erfand that, I know agreeable to you, as it will afford a fignal opportunity " of fhowing your regard for religion and virtue."-" Heh !" aniwered has patron. "My regard for religion and vir-6 tee!

" tue! What the devil does the fellow mean? What regard have I ever thown for either, in word or action, • that fhould put fuch a thought in your head ? If you are come to preach to me, you shall foon find the effects of your piety.'- ' Pardon me, fir; I know you better than to be guilty of fuch prefumption ! What I mean ' is this : Fortune has favoured me with an opportunity of putting it into your power to eltablish such a charac-' ter; and as I know most people are fond of the name, " when it can be obtained without the trouble of the practice, I thought it my duty to acquaint you with it; especially, as it will enable you, at the same time, to do a particular pleasure to your friends in power.'- Why, " there may be fomething in that, as you fay ; but for the ' reft, I care as little for the name as I do for the prac-' tice; and would not give myfelf a moment's trouble to get it; fo, be quick, and let me hear what you have 'got to fay. I have a match to ride to-morrow against a gentleman for a confiderable wager, and muff fee his groom this morning in order to fettle matters with bim; befides which, I have an affignation with his " wife, who expects me at this very time, to that I have 'not a-moment to lofe about religion and virtue.'

My matter, who knew him too well to attempt interfering with fuch engagements, politely withed him fuccels, and then gave him, in few words, an account of the whole affair, only referving to himdelf the honour of the thought, with which his patron was to pleafed, that he promited to give him all the affiftance in his power, if it was only for the fun of the thing. Accordingly, as toon as he could have time from his own weightier concerns, he mentioned the matter to thole more immediately concerned in it, who embraced the project eagerly, and rewarded my matter with the moit liberal promites for his pains, of which they refolved to take advantage, in order to crufh a perfon, either hated or feared by every one among them.

In the attack made upon him for this purpole, the principal part was undertaken by one, whole regard for religion and virtue was heightened by a motive not the WoL. III. Ta3

222

most conflitent with either. This was the perfon who had been competitor with the culprit for the higher order of the mock-monastery. In the account I gave you of that curious transaction, I observed that he cherished a fecret grudge against the other, which was aggravated to violently by the difgrace he fuffered on that eccafion; that he had prevailed to have him expelled the fociety. Such an opportunity, therefore, as this, of completing his revenge, was not to be miffed by one of his principles .-Accordingly, though at the fight of the ballad he knew it to be no more than one of a collection of the fongs which he had himfelf often bore a part in finging at the monastery, and fome of the worft of which he had boafted of being the author of, he inveighed against it with all the fervency and enthusiastic zeal of a modern fanatic, and displayed the danger of letting fuch an infult upon everything held facred go unpunished, in fuch ftrong and affecting colours, as afforded high entertainment to all who heard him, and were acquainted with his life. But all his eloquence would have proved ineffectual to make fuch of his fraternity as were not, like him, ftimulated by private motives, give the lie to their own practice in fo flagrant a manner, as to cenfure the theory of it, had not fome particular expreffions happened to affect the honour of one of them ; whom all the wift of course espouled; and thus, for once, honour turned the scale in favour of virtue and religion, too light by themfelves; and the ballad was condemned, as tending to debauch the principles of the people, though it was fufficiently known that it was not defigned for publication, nor would ever have been heard of, had not this attack raifed a curiofity about it.

Through the whole of this important transfaction, my mafter performed his part most eleverly, fropping at nothing that was thought any way neceflary to bring it to effect. As foon, therefore, as it was concluded, he prepared to receive the acward of his labour, the enjoyment of which he had anticipated in imagination in every fhape it could be given. But it was not long before he found his hopes had been too fanguine. Initiad of being rewanted

223-

warded immediately, as he had been made to expect, the job was fcarcely done, when he could perceive the finiles of favour grow cooler upon him, as often as he went to pay his court to his patrons, in order to keep them in mind of their promifes. A ftate of fuch uncertainty, fevere enough upon any, was not to be borne by one in his circumitances. The expectations he had railed, in the height of his hopes, had opened the mouths of all his creditors upon him, with an importunity not to be quieted ; befide, that he had imbezzled fome public money entrufted to him, a demand for which he expected every day, and knew he could not thift off for a moment.

Driven almost to distraction by fuch irrefiftible necesfity, he had no refource, but to throw himfelf at the feet of the perfon who had appeared most fanguine in the purfuit of his scheme, and consequently been most liberal of his promifes to him, and implore his affiftance to extricate him from his accumulated diftreffes. But they who will most readily avail themselves of villany, always deteft the villain. All the return he received was a cold profession of concern; and a shameless excuse of wanting that power to relieve him, which the caitiff fuppliant well knew he had. A new misfortune often lightens the weight of those under which the mind was finking before, by roufing it from liftless dejection to an exertion of its powers. Such a difappointment of his only hope fhewed him all the horrors of his fituation ; and made him instantly call about how to elcape from what he found he could not redrefs : inftead, therefore, of betraying it by his looks, which he knew were watched, he affumed an air of uncommon fpirits, and telling every one that he had got a politive affurance of receiving the promifed reward without any further delay, he went to one of his tradelman, by that time he thought the news might have reached him, and taking up goods to a confiderable amount, for which he considently engaged to pay at a fixed and fhort day, no fooner got them into his pofferfion, than he fold them privately at half price, and packing up whatever he could carry with him, fled beyond the reach of his

his creditors; and to proved how far his late conduct had proceeded, as he profetled, from his high regard to moral virtue and religion.

224

The agitation and horrors of his mind, from the time he had refolved upon flight, till he had effected it, may be eafly conceived. Whether the prefent fafety it procured him gave him any lafting relief, I had not an opportunity of feeing, as I quitted his fervice, at the inn where he took a poft-chaife to get off; though it is molt probable, that, after the firit hurry of his firits fubfided, a fenie of the various villanies, by which he had brought himfelf to fuch a ftate of exile, imbittered the very bleffing of liberty, and kept his mind in flavery; though his body was free.

# CHAP. LVIII.

Chryfal again changes his fervice. His new mafter is obliged to pay expedition fees, to get over artificial delayt. He and his mifriefs fet out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home. Chryfal makes fone interefting reflections on a most important fulfeet. Story of Chryfal's mafter. Chryfal continues his reflections on the fame fubject, which he confiders in a further and most affecting point of wiew. Chryfal changes his fervice.

MY late mafter had fcarce decamped, when a young gentleman came into the inn, and ordering a chaile and four to be got ready with the utmoft expedition, gave my new mafter a bank note to pay for it, in the change of which he received me.

The anxiety which my new mafter expressed to have the grooms make halfe was a fufficient reason for them to practice every delay they could devide, in order to extort expedition fees, at which they were sever, that he was forced to give them atmosf as much as he paid for the chaife, before he could get it to fir. When at length every thing was fettled, he directed them to a particular place, where a hackney-coach waited for him, out of which he received a young lady, with a couple of small bundles, and then bade the possibilitions drive on; but they had no fooner got but of the town, than he changed his orders,

and

225

and directed them to take another road. This occasioned a new defay. The fellows alledged their being obliged. to go where their mafter had ordered them, and no where elfe; and made to many difficulties, that, as they expected, my mafter was compelled to purchase their compliance at their own price. All obitacles being thus got over, he turned to the young lady, who fat trembling and panting by his fide, and embracing her tenderly, ' Now, ' my deareft love,' faid he, ' all our fears are over. Should ' we even be traced to the inn, this turn will effectually ' baffle all purfuit.'- ' I with it may,' answered the, ' but " I shall never think myself fafe, till I am abfolutely " out of their reach, and all is over."

The conversation of lovers is agreeable only to themfelves. 'The reft of their's for two days, as they flew rather than travelled (for which expedition they paid fufficiently, every fet of poffillions giving the word to the next) will not bear repetition. As foon as they got to the end of their journey, they put an end to their most immediate fears alfo, by a marriage, which might have been performed with a much greater probability of fuccels at home, had not a politive law prevented it.

I fee your turprile at my faying that a politive law prevented marriage, as the profperity of the community depends in the first degree on the promotion of that state. But fo it happens in human affairs, that the true intereft of the people is not always the first object of the laws made for their government. Though too general experience confirms this remark, it is neceffary to explain the particular circumftance that gives occasion to it, in this instance. The first end of marriage is the propagation of the species, in the manner most agreeable to reason, and likely to produce the happiness of the parties, as well as the population of the state. As the passions which lead to this end are ftrongeft before reason has acquired frength to direct them, it is neceffary that they should be subject to the direction of others, who may be hetter qualified to difcern and promote their intereft. This right of direction naturally belongs to those who are most intimately concerned

226

cerned in that interest, as affecting a part of themselves; and hence, among every people upon earth, however dif-fering in other respects and cultoms, this right of directing matrimonial choice has always belonged to the parents; till maturity of age may be perfumed to ripen judgment, and to remove the neceffiry upon which it is founded. But, however evident this right is, the paffions of youth fo often rebel against it, that it was found neceffary to enforce it by expreis laws. Thefe laws, hough, the profefied end of which is to make marriage happy, thould never be perverted to the unnatural purpole of preventing it entirely, by clogging it with fuch unneceffary and unreasonable restrictions, as tend to subjugate not only natural liberty, but also the highest interest of the state, which depends upon population, to avarice, caprice, or pride of family in parents ; or to views of interest in those appointed to fupply their place. The particular cafe of my master, which gave occasion to thele reflections, was this : He was the younger fon of a noble family, to the honours of which his riling virtues promiled to add new luftre. Youthful inclination had first attached him to this lady, whole merits upon acquaintance confirmed that attachment more than her very large fortune. Such a marriage could not fail to meet the approbation of reafon and paternal prudence. Accordingly, every neceffary preli-minary was agreed upon, when the fudden death of her father threw in legal obstacles, which threatened to prevent it, at leaft for a longer time than youthful impatience could bear. For, as he had not actually figned to his confent, those to whom the care of his daughter devolved, thought proper to exert the right which the law gave them of objecting to the difparity between her fortune, and that of her lover, and to break off a match evidently for their mutual advantage. When the lovers found that all they could do to influence their compliance was ineffectual, they had recourse to this expedient (which the fage makers of the aw had, perhaps inadvertently, left open) to evade it, by flying beyond its power ; and there folemnized a marriage, which fhould be valid at their re-

tum home, shough entered into without any of the prudential cautions for fecuring happinels, which are cuftomary on fuch occafions, and he had in vain offered to come into; to that the law which was profeffedly defigned to prevent inconfiderate and unhappy marriages, in its effect deprived this, and the many marriages of the kind, of the means for procuring happinels, which former laws, founded on rea(on, had provided for them.

It is not to be denied, but the evils which were immediately alledged as the occafion of this law called aloud for remedy; but whether the remedy provided by it did not introduce an inconvenience of worle confequence to the public than those evils, is not fo clear a cafe. Whatever reftrictions might have been thought neceffary, in worldly wifdom, to prevent fecret marriages, by which either the honours of families might be supposed to fuffer diminution, or their fortunes fall a prey to mercenary defign, where these confiderations interfere not, such restrictions should never, in good policy, extend. On the contrary, every impediment and delay, not immediately proceeding from moral neceffity, should be removed ; and the state of matrimony encouraged by fuch honours and advantages as fhould counterbalance the inconveniences of it to perfons labouring under circumstances of indigence; by which means, the inferior ranks of the people, whole numbers make the ftrength of a ftate, would be delivered from the difficulties and fears which at prefent deter them from entering into matrimony, to the heavy loss of the community, and the immediate ruin of fuch numbers of both fexes, whofe natural paffions, debarred from this, their only proper refource, lead them into fuch . vices, as defeat the end of their creation, and make them a reproach to humanity. How many infants would daily be faved from the most unnatural murder, to the ornament and advantage of their country, could the wretched parents have faved their own fhame by marriage ? How many females, who offer themselves in the highways to brutal profitution, perifhing with cold, hunger, and difcale, might have been the happy mothers of many childern.

228

dren, and performed all the duties of their flation in virtuous effeem, had not their being hindered from marrying by impediments made by law, betrayed them to defruction?

As foon as my mafter had thus accomplified the end of his journey, he fet out on his return, to enjoy the fruits of it at home. But I continued not in his polfefion to fee much of that mutual happinefs which his marriage promified, being borrowed from him on the road, by a gentleman of his acquaintance, who had been bubbled out of all his money at a horfe-race, and was now fighting his way to town, by running in debt at every inn, and raifing contributions thus on all hemet, of whom he had the leaft knowledge.

# CHAP. LIX.

Chryfal's new master strikes out an adventure. He is fmitten with a girl in a travelling-waggon, and changes bu appearance, to get admiffion to her. Account of the compary in the waggon. A good-natured mijtake of one of the palfengers gives occasion to a broil, which is put an end to by an accident that does not mend the matter.

ISTRESSING as fuch a fituation would have been to another, cuftom had made it fo familiar to my new mafter, that he thought nothing of it, but travelled on with his equipages, as unconcerned, and ready to engage in any mad freak, as if his pockets were full of money. Nor was he long without an opportunity of indulging his disposition. As he was rolling carelessly along, his chariot was flopped in a narrow part of the road, by one of those travelling waggons, whole unwieldy weight gives them the privilege of taking place of their betters. Such a circumitance naturally made the travellers in both carriages look out, when he was fruck with the uncommon beauty of a young creature in the waggon, whole charms in the first opening of their bloom, gave fcope to imagination to paint a prospect, if possible beyoud their prefent perfection.

Such temptation could fearce be refifted by one who had reafoned his paffions into the beft subjection, much

224

lefs by him, who blindly obeyed them in, or rather fiimulated them to their utmost excess. He no fooner faw, therefore, than he refolved to have her by any means. The first thing to be done, for this pious purpole, was to change his appearance, in order to get into her company, as the leaft fulpicion of his rank would directly blow his defign. But this was no difficulty. He was well accuftomed to lay it down; and the meaneft character in life fat as naturally upon him as his own. Accordingly, as foon as his chariot pafied the waggon, he drove on furioufly, till he was out of fight, when he alighted, and changing clothes with one of his fervants out of livery, ordering them to leave the great road, and wait for him at an inn, fome miles diftance across the country. Thus eqipped for his enterprise, he walked on leifurely, like a common traveller, till he was over-taken by the waggon, the driver of which plied him in the usual way to take a place, which after some affected difficulties he agreed to. But the greatest difficulty arose not from him. The waggon was already to full, that when the driver mentioned taking in another, the passengers all cried out against it with one voice. But his authority was too abfolute to be refilted. He fixed his ladder, and ordered them to make room, barely condeicending to fay that it was for a gentleman who had been taken fuddenly ill, and wanted to go only to the next village. This circumftance, though treated with brutal difregard by the reft, had an immediate effect upon the tender disposition of his distined prey, who fqueezing clofer to her mother, he crept into his nelt, and fettled himfelf as conveniently as he could next to her in the ftraw.

The company into which he had thus thruft himfelf feemed to be a reprefentative of all the heteroclite characters of the age. Befide the young female, whole appearance had attracted him, and her mother, a plain, goodooking woman, it confifted of a mountebank-doctor, and his zany, a methodift-preacher, a fireling-actor and actrefs, a fat ale-wife, a fervant-maid, who was going to London to repair a cracked reputation, a recruiting V.O., TH.

230

ferjeasit, and two recruits, an outlawed fmuggler, and a broken excifeman. Though my mailter could not, at first view, diffinguish all their different characters, some of them were fo ftrongly marked, that he promifed himfelf the higheft entertainment from the claihing which he concluded muft inevitably arife in fuch a groupe, and was refolved to promote upon the first occasion. But an accident foon gave him that pleafure without the trouble of planning it.

As the weather was warm, and few of the company could be fujpected of the delicacy of changing their clothes often, it may be supposed that every favour which arole among them was not purely aromatic. My matter had not been many minutes in his place, when the various odours fuming round him had fuch an effect upon his fenfes, that he undefignedly breathed a with for a bottle of spirits.

As he had been introduced under the pretence of being fick, the ale-wife, who happened to be near him, miltook his meaning, and thought he wanted a dram, not once dreaming of any other use of spirits. Pulling out a flack, therefore, from under a coat, in the height of good nature, ' Spirits!' faid fhe, ' they are poilonous ' ftuff. Here is what will do you more good by half!' Then drawing the cork, and taking a fup, to flow him that it was not poifon, 'Drink of this,' continued fhe, reaching him the flack, 'and I'll warrant it will fettle ' you. It is right Hollands.'-Before my malter had time to accept or refuse her offer, the actor, who fat between them, fmoaked her miltake, and intercepting the bottle, as the reached acrofs him, cried out in triumph,

Bravo, my quean! your gin, from Holland pure,
My ftomach fooner than his head will cure.'

Then taking a large go down or two, ' Here Belvidera,' added he, giving the bottle to the actuels, ' in this friendly ' cup drown all your forrows !-Drink, as you love me, " deep.' His faichful mate could not difobey fuch a command. She took the bottle, and lifting it to her head, " Thus to the bottom, 'faid fhe, ' though it were a mile!'

But

231

Bot fhe was interrupted in her intention by the fmuggler, who lay at her feet, and no foomer imelt the dear layor, than he raifed his head, and perceiving what fhe was about, 'Avaft hauling there,' cried he, fnatching the bottle from her mouth, 'or you'll pump the feupper 'dry.'—And then going to put it up to his own, 'Hold,' faid the excifeman, catching his hand with the fame defign, 'I feize this in the king's name, till I know whe-'ther it has paid duty.'

The mention of the word *duty* fet the finuggler's blood on fire. • Duty I you finark ! faid he, graiping the bottle fafter, and catching him in return by the throat with the other hand, • I'll feize you i damn my eyes, and 'limbs! I'll pay you the duty, if you don't loofe your • hold this moment, you feoundrel! that I will.' Though he griped the exciteman's throat fo hard, that he could not return his compliment in words, he icorned to yield the prize without one effort. Giving a twift, therefore, with all his force, to wreft it out of his antagoniff's hand, though he could not fucceed, he prevailed to far as to turn the mouth of the bottle downwards, by which means the contents were poured tull in the face of the ferjeant, who lay fnoring, on his back with his mouth wide open.

Welcome as fuch a gueft would have been in a proper manner, the intrufion thus unexpectedly was not fo agreeable. He flarted up, half fuffocated ; and belching his dofe full in the face of one of the recruits, ' Blood anouns ! ' fire and fury !' fputtered he. ' What's the meaning of "all this?" Just as he faid this, one of the wheels of the waggon came into a deep hole, with fuch a plump, that though it did not abiolutely overfet, it tumbled all the paffengers on top of one another; and inftantly put aftop to the cries of the ale-wife, for the loss of her liquor .--The fcreams, oaths, and execrations of the whole company, on this occation, would have given my mafter the higheft delight, had he not been rather too nearly concerned to enjoy the fun, the fat ale wife being thrown fo full upon him, that he was unable to fair, though almost fmothered, fo that he could not help adding his cries to CHAP. the concert. U 2

#### THE ADVENTURES CHAP. LX.

232

ChPyfal's mafter experiences fome comfortable confequences from the obliging difposition of the waggoner. He pursues has defign, by paying common civility to his mistrefs's mother. Conversation and behaviour of the company. Chryfal's master, in the pursuit of his defign, meets an adventure that cools his passion, and realfembles the company, when they are all like to be at a fault, till one of them luckily bits off the fcent.

THEN the driver had got his waggon out of the hole, and feen that all was fafe about it, he came to know what was the matter with his paffengers ; and having unpacked them, my mafter had the cpleafure to hear the young woman propole to her mother to walk a little way, till fome, not the most agreeable, confequences of the late difaster should blow off, to which the readily confented, as he prepared to accompany them, both for the fame reason, and in order to have an opportunity of making an acquaintance, which he found he could not fo well do in the waggon. But the waggoner was not in the humour to give them that indulgence. When they called to him to let them down, he answered furlily, that they had not above a couple of miles to their inn; and if they were to ftop thus every moment, he should not get in, in time, and io without any further ceremony whipped on his horfes. This was a fevere difappointment to my mafter, who foon grew fo fick, that he could not hold up his head all the reft of the way.

But the qualms of his ftomach did not affect his confeience, fo as to make him in the leaft alter his defign-On his arrival at the inn, he made a pretence of the compafion which the young girl and her mother had exprefied for him, to attach hime if particularly to them, and ply them with wine, by way of return, which falle modefly made the mother take to freely as gave him good hopes of fuccets. The convertation and behaviour at fupper was friftly in the chracter of the company. The methodift made a long grace, and talked of religion and temperance, which he cat more than any two at the table,

()

and

233

and his eyes were gloating at the fervant maid, his fellowtraveller, who feemed to liften to him with great complacency and attention. The actor mimicked the methodift to his face, and folled out his tongue at every one elfe, as they happened to look another way. The actrels fpoke in heroics, and turned up her nole at every thing and every body. The finuggler and excileman fat growling at each other, as if they meant to make a further trial of their manhood. The ferjeant talked of his exploits in the wars, and proved his valour by an oath at every word, which his two pupils liftened to with looks of admiration, that flowed they defigned to imitate that part of his example at leaft. The ale-wife lamented the lofs of her gin, which, fhe faid, fhe could not replace with any like it, on the whole road. In fhort, every body eat and talked; and talked and eat together, except the girl and her mother, who were quite loft in altonishment, at a fcene fo new to them, and my mafter, whofe thoughts were too much taken up with his own fcheme to mind any thing elfe. Accordingly, he stepped out when supper was ended, and engaging the chamber-maid in his intereft, by a prefent of half a crown, the thowed him where his mistrefs was to lie, and promifed to fettle all things in the manner most convenient to his defigns, by putting her and her mother in the bed next to the door, there being two in the room, and placing in the other the tervant-maid, who paid for a bed to herfelf, as her modefty would not permit her to fleep with a ftranger.

As foon as the houfe was quiet, and my mafter thought the wine which he had forced upon the mother had fecured her, he got up, and ftealing in his fhirt to the door of their chamher, found it open, upon which he entered and crept to the bed, where he expected to find his miltrefs, without ever confidering what muft be the confequence of furprising her in fuch a manner. Opening the curtains, therefore, fortly, to feel, by the difference of fize, on which fide fhe lay, he had fearse put his hand upon the clothes, when it was feized and grined fo hard, that he foon loft all thought of every thing but difengag-Vol. III. U 3 ing

234

ng himfelf. For this purpofe, he made two or three efforts, but finding them ineffectual, and provoked at the pain his hand fuffered in the ftruggle, he difcharged a blow with the other full in the face of his antagonif, who fpringing directly out of bed, returned it with luch ufury, that my poor mafter fell fprawling on the flor, where he roared out murder with all his might, in which he was immediately joined by thole who lay in the other bed, whole cries not only raited the house, his rafeoue, but alfo faved him from further violence, his antagonift defifting to beat him, in order to make his retreat in time.

When those who lay nearest were affembled at the door, half clad, and worfe armed with whatever they could catch up in their confusion, prudential regard to perfonal fafety made them all stop short, every one finding some pretence to excufe himfelr from going in first, and preffing the post of honour upon his neighbour, till they at length railed their fears fo high, that it was uncertain whether any one would venture in before day-light, though the cries still continued, had not the smuggler, who did not wake to join them at first, put an end to the debate, ' Damn you all,' faid he, fnatching a candle from one, and a poker from another, ' for a pack of cow-' ardly lubbers ! Will you ftand jawing here, while the " people are murdering?' Then ruthing in, ' Hallo!' continued he, ' what's going forward here, in the devil's " name?"

The first object that presented itfelf to his view, when he entered, was my matter, who was fill upon the ground, unable, between fright and beating, to atife. Advancing to him, therefore, 'Hip, melfinate!' faidhe, giving him a kick on his nated posteriors, ' what cheer ' Speak 'if you are alive!'— The entrance of light reftoring my matter to fome fpirit, he raifed his head at this falute, and making an effort to get up, 'I fearce know whether 'I am or not,' antwered he, 'I have been to beaten by 'that bitch of Babel; but the fhall pay for it, if I ever-'recover.' The place where he was found direct ing this acculation to the perion in that bed, while fome of them helped him

235

him up, the reft gathered round it, and afked the fervantmaid, who lay there, what had induced her to treat the gentleman in fuch a manner? But the mention of her name faved her the trouble of a reply. Before the could fpeak, ' It was not the !' exclaimed my mafter : ' I mean the old beldam, mother to the young witch, whole baby-face brought me among you, and who lay in this · bed. It was fhe who abufed me thus; or rather fome ' porter in woman's clothes, who paffed for her, for no ' woman ever had fuch ftrength.'- ' I believe you muft ' be miltaken, fir,' interposed the excileman, ' the people ' you mean are lying quietly in the next bed, and feem to be as much frighted as you are hurt.'- ' How !' returned my mafter, ' did they not lie in this bed, next the ' door ?'- ' No,' answered the other, ' Mrs. Margery ' lies here, as grave and demure as a whore at a chriften-'ing.'- ' Then the jade of a chamber-maid played me a ' trick,' replied my master. ' But who the devil lay with her? For I am fure the was never able to do " what I have fuffered."- " As for that !' faid the actor, who had all the while been peeping round the bed, ' I believe it will be no hard matter to find it out. Thefe ' breeches,' pulling a pair from under the boliter, ' mult belong to iomebody, and will certainly point out her bed-fellow, if the lady, like a true Amazon, did not " wear them herfelf."

### CHAP. LXI.

The advantage of a ready alfurance. The methodist accounts curiously for what he has done ; and turning the tables upon Chryfal's mafter, charges bim with robbery, auto is thereupon obliged to discover bimself, but is contradicted by one of the company, who boafts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whole master extricates bim from his difirefs, and makes out the mistakes that had caused so much confusion.

S the breeches were immediately known to belong to the methodift, they marched away directly to his bedfide, for he had not joined them, and afked him how he had come to use the gentleman in that inhuman man-

ner, flowing him my matter, whom they had dragged along with them.

236°

"Who I ?' answered the methodist, affecting all the furprife of innocence, and determined to deny what he thought could not be proved, ' heaven forbid that I " should use any fellow christian ill. I engage not in such ' broils. My warfare is with the fpirit.'- ' And fome-' times with the fleth, too, I believe, doctor l' interrupted the actor. ' Nay, it is in vain to deny it ! Do you know " thefe breeches, doctor? ' ' Breeches !' exclaimed he, ftarting up in real affright, and fumbling under his bolfter, " Oh they are gone! they are gone! I am robbed, ruined, " and undone !'- " No, doctor ; they are not gone, as you fee! but the queftion is, how they came under the young " woman's bed's-head, where this gentleman received this " abufe.'- ' Let him answer that !' replied the methodist, never at a lois for an impudent lie. . Let him aniwer " that! all I know of the matter is this : being diffurbed ' in my reft, I then knew not, but now plainly perceive by what caufe, I arole to pray, as is my cuftom, when hear-' ing iomebody go foffly out of the room, I watched, as " was my duty, to prevent any evil, and following the footfeps into another chamber, caught a man in the very fact of attempting the virtue of some female, who lay there; " upon which, expolulating with him upon the heinoul-" nels of fuch a crime, he flew at me fo furioufly that I · could fearce defend myielf from him, and if in the fray " he received any hurt, he must charge it to himself, as " he was the aggreffor : but this is not the whole ; I now e perceive, that I was diffurbed out of my fleep by his tealing my breeches from under my head, which he ac-' cordingly took with him into the room of that damfel, and therefore I demand juffice against him for the attempt, as well as for any lois I may have fuffered.'-Saying this he took his breeches out of the actor's hand, and learching the pockets, ' It is too frue !' continued he, gnafhing his teeth, and wringing his hands, in a perfect agony. ' It is too true! I am ruined and undone: • I am robbed of all the money which I had collected in · niv

337

"my pilgrimage to relieve the poor of the Lord. Twenty golden goineas, befide filver, and other monies. Let him be fearched : let every body be fearched this moment. I muft have my money! I muft have my money!"

As my mafter was a stranger to them all; and not bleffed with a face that could befpeak much favour, they began to give credit to the charge against him, especially, as the fervant-maid corroborated it, by faying that he had alfo been runaging for her pockets, when that worthy gentleman interrupted him (for women and all were now gathered to hear the matter canvafied) and talked of carrying him before a magistrate in the morning, that he might be knt to jail. At another time, fuch a scence would have given him the highest pleasure, but he had no tafte for fun now. Enraged, therefore, at the iniquity of fuch a charge, and the infolence with which they were proceeding to treat him, ' Unhand me, at your perils, 'you fcoundrels' faid he, telling them who he was. 'Un-' hand me, this moment. As for that infamous villain, and his trull, I charge you to fecure them directly, and fend ' in my name for a magistrate. I'll make examples of them, 'at leaft.' You may conceive with what furprife they were all ftruck at hearing this. However, as he gave only his bare word for it, all were not equally ready to believe him. ' You, my friend Scapegrace!' faid the actor, coming and looking him full in the face. No ! no ! Sir : ' fay that to those who don't know him. I am his inti-' mate companion ; his cholen among ten thoufand. There ' is not a fine girl upon the town but we have bilked; nor an house in the hundred of Drury where we have not kicked up a duft together. He and I are Pylades and · Oreftes ; fworn friends and brothers. No ! no ! that ftroke " won't pais upon me."

This made matters worfe than ever with my mafter, adding ridicule to infult, which was poured upon him in fuch torrents from overy mouth, that he could not fpeak aword in his own defence. But hie diffres lafted not long. The fervants of a gentleman who lickily happened to lie at the inn that night, being raifed by the uproar,

233.

one of them knew my master, through all his difguises, " By your leave, there !' faid he, rushing through the crowd, and floving afide fome of them, who had already laid hold of him. Are you all mad, to use a gentleman in this manner?"—Then addreffing himself to my master, "What is the matter, please your honour? I am forry to " fee your honour in fuch a pickle. My mafter,' naming him, ' is in the houfe, and will do you juffice. I'll run, " and call him directly.' Such a teltimony inftantly turned the scale, and made those who were most infolent to him before, now most officious to pay him respect and attendance. Accordingly, he was removed, without afking his leave, into his own room, where they were preparing to humanize his appearance, when the gentleman entered. Much as my mafter was above the weakness of fhame, he could not avoid feeling fomething like it, on being caught in fuch a condition. He was fitting on the fide of the bed, covered only with the ragged remains of his thirt, which had been torn to pieces in the fray, daubed all over with blood and dirt, and beaten to fuch a degree, that he fcarce retained one feature of the human face divine, which had not loft all likenels of the original. The gentleman started at such a spectacle, and stopped fhort, in doubt whether it could be he, till my matter's voice fatisfied hime when he gave orders to have every one concerned in the affair fecured, and then feeing the poor fufferer taken proper care of, and put to bed, he proceeded to inquire into the matter, the circumftances of which appeared to be thefe: The methodift having agreed with the fervant-maid, his fellow-traveller, to have fome ipiritual conversation with her that night, she promiled to lie in the bed next the door, and, therefore, after the chamber-mail had affigned them their quarters, as the had fettled with my mafter, feigned fome pretence to defire a change, which the others readily contented to. Accordingly, as the methodift wast fecure of his reception, he came foon; and was got into bed to his disciple, when my master made his attempt, whole hand he feized, in the manuer I have related ; and would have beaten him . ftil

C

fill more feverely for his intrufion, had it not been for his crying out, upon which he retreated to his own bed, in fuch a hurry, to elcape detection, that he forgot his breeches, which he had taken with him, for fear ione of his chamber-fellows fhould fearch them, and rob him of eight or ten guineas, that he had picked up in the courfe of his preaching about the country, and the actor had made bold to take as lawful prize, when they fell into his hands, and afterwards found means to convey to his wife, for more fecurity. Every thing being thus cleared up, the gentleman advifed my mafter to drop the affair, as profecuting it would only expose him (till more, to which he willingly agreed, having no inclination for any further trouble about it.

The methodift, though, was far from being fo eafly pacified for the lofs of the firits of his fummer's labour, in the vineyard, which he thought worfe of than a thoufand beatings, and was refolved to recover if politble, in fpite of all their fcoffs and infults. But the detection of the other part of his 'ftory had fo entirely detroyed his credit, that he found it in vain to perfuit, elpecially as the actor offered to make oath that he had that very evening applied to him, to borrow a fulling to pay his reckoning. Curfing them all, therefore, in the bitternefs of his foul, he changed his route, and went upon another preaching progrets in order to retrieve his lofs, in which pious work he prevailed upon his difciple and fellow-fufferer in fname, the fervant-maid, whofe pockets had elcaped the pillagers, to accompany him.

By this time the waggon was ready to fet out, when the reft of the company departed, except the actor and his lady, who were to tired of that vulgar way of travelling, that they thought proper to continue then joinney in the flage coach; and my mafter, who was laid up in falves and flannels, had loft both ability and inclination to purfue his enterprife any farther.

CHAP. LXM.

Chryfal gives a firiking account of his mafter. He arrives in London, and pays a wifit to his mistrels. His carious \$40

rious method of courting. His mistress makes him a pre-jent of balf her fortune beforehand, in returk for which he promifes to marry her next day, and then goes to bis girl. Difference in his behaviour to the two naturally accounted for. An uncommon guest at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptial night, forw a fill more uncommon instance of matrimonial complaifance. Chryfal changes his fervice.

THE fingularity of my mafter's character gave me a curiofity to take a view of his life, while he was fleeping off fome of the effects of his late adventure. He was born in a rank, that supported the fair hopes of honour and advantage, which the first opening of his youth univerfally raifed. But an error in his education blafted all those hopes in the bud, and drove him into every extreme of vice and folly, which it was defigned to guard against. The bad confequences which are feen to attend indulging the paffions too far, often lead weak minds to attempt suppressing them entirely, without confidering that the crime is only in the excefs. The difficulty and pain of this attempt throws fuch a gloom over the whole appearance, as hides the native beauty of virtue, and makes it feem to be the fource of unhappinels to thole who view it only in these effects, so as to terrify them from the purfuit of it.

On this error pretended enthuliafts have in every age founded their influence, by enflaving the mind to groundless terrors, which they never fail to turn to their own advantage. To the conduct of fuch blind and bale guides, the mother of my master, to whom the fole care of his education had fallen by the death of her hufband, implicitly refigned herfelf, and of courfe her fon, in return for which they flattered Ber fanaticiim and vanity together, with promifes of breeding him up in the perfection of fanctity. For this purpole he was debarred from every innocent recreation, and harraffed with ftudies improper for his age. His appetites were mortified by falting ; his reft was broken to chaunt hymns, and pray; nor was he allowed even to fpeak but in fcripture-phrase ; and all as C

247

the indifpenfible duties of virtue and religion. Such a flavery naturally gave him to great an averfion to every thing that bore their names, that the moment he became his own mafter he placed the fupreme pleafure of his life in acting in contradiction to them, by every inftance of expensive and vicious excess, in which he squandered away the inheritance of his anceftors, and broke his conflitution with a rapidity that gave fcandal to vice, put folly out of countenance, and made his name a by-word in an age of excelles. And in this fituation he was when I came into his poffellion. Though it was near noon before he awoke, the gentleman whole prefence had fo luckily relieved him the night before waited to fee him, when he completed his kindnefs by lending him money to defray his expences up to town, upon which he fent for his equipage, and fet off without further concern at what had happened. On his arrival in London, he drove directly to the last place which any other man in his circumitances would have thought of going to. This was the house of a lady of large fortune, to which he had paid his addreffes, fince his extravagance had diffipated his own; and with this peculiar honefty, that he never even pretended a regard to herfelf. The fuccels of fuch a courtship must appear improbable, but there is no accounting for the caprice of woman. She had taken a liking to him which feemed to rife in proportion to the flights he showed her, and was refolved to gratify, if only nominally, for the could expect no more at the hazard of every happinels of life.

It may be fuppoled that the fight of him, in fuch a condition, ftruck her feverely. She flew to him, threw her arms around his neck, and bemoaned his misfortune in the moft puffionate terms. But that was not what he wanted. Shaking her off, without feigning the lealt return to her fondnefs, 'Ptha !' faid he, ' leave off this ' fluff; and let me know whether you have got the mo-' ney I told you I fhould want to say off thole debts of ' honour : it you have, and will allo give me up the reft ' of your forture, without referve, I li marry you. ---Vol. HI. X ' Will

242

Will you !' exclaimed fhe, intrapture, 'then you have 'it, if it were ten times as much. Here it is,' opening a bureau,' and reaching him a handful of bank-notes, 'I 'fold out half my fortune to raife it the very day you lpoke 'to me.'—'I wilh I had known that,' faid he, putting the notes in his pocket, 'and then I might have made my 'excursion into the country longer. Farewel! I'll call 'upon you to morrow evening, and conclude the job. 'Do you have the hangman and halter ready.'—' What 'do you mean ? I don't underftand you.'—' What fhould 'I mean but the parfon and the ring. Is not that an 'halter ? And does he not hang us up with it for life ?' '—But, can't you fay a few moments : I'want to know 'how you came in that condition !'

" It was only a fcrape about a wench. I'll tell you the particulars another time. My girl would not for-' give me, if the knew I was to long in town, without go-'ing to her.'- 'But will you certainly come to-morrow? " I am afraid you will difappoint me now you have got " what you wanted.'- " Never fear, I have not got what 'I want, while you have a fhilling left in the world.'-Saying which, he walked away, without deigning to take any further leave. But his behaviour was not fo cavalier, where he was going. The moment he entered his miltrais's room fhe flew at him, not with the fondnels of a dove, ' So,' faid fhe, ' what bawdy-house have ' you been breaking up now ? You do well to come to " me in fuch a pickle; but I'll fee you damn'd before ' I'll take the trouble of nurfing you.'-' Don't be in a ' paffion, my love,' faid he, taking her in his arms, and giving her a kifs. ' It is no fuch thing. I fell among a gang of foot-pads, who abused me in this manner becaufe I made renifance.'- ' A very likely ftory truly, invented, I suppose, to excuse your not bringing me " money ! but if that is the case, you may go to the devil from whence you came. I'll not be troubled with ' your company, - No, my dear, I never come to you ' empty handed, let me do as I will eliewhere.'-With which words, he pulled out one of the bank notes he had ( inft

just got from the other, and giving it to her, put her at length in good humour.

I fee your indignation at a man's acting in fuch a manner; but you could expect no other. The fame bafenefs of temper which could treat the other woman with infult, naturally submitted to be infulted by this. You imagine that his miftrels must have uncommon attractions, to give her fuch power over him ! You judge right .--Her's were uncommon indeed ! She had loft her hair and teeth in a falivation ! and was allowed to be the most profligate of her profellion !- charms fufficient to attach a man of his tafte.

My mafter having thus happily made his peace, the loving couple fat down to their bottle, as ufual, over which happening to mention his intended marriage the next day, her delicacy took fuch offence, that the pofitively refused to confent to it, till he promifed not only that the fhould be prefent, but also to return and fpend his wedding night with her, to prove her triumph over the happy bride. Accordingly, he took her with him the next evening, and introducing her to the expecting fair one, ' I have brought my girl,' faid he, ' to grace 'our nuptials. The dear creature inlifted upon it; and 'you know I can't refuse her any thing.' The bride elect was to enraptured at the thought of her approaching happineis, that the had no fenfe of the infult, but received her with politeness, perhaps not without a mixture of pride, on the occation.

There are fome fcenes, the extravagance of which beggars defcription. I fhall, therefore, only iay, that the behaviour of the company was in character during the ceremony and entertainment, at the end of which the bridegroom alledging his promile to go back with his miltrels, the convenient bride not only conlented; but also proposed preparing an apartment for her in her own house, to lave him that trouble for the future, and procure for herfelf the pleafure of his company-a fcheme that was actually carried into execution, while fhe had a house to receive her; which was not very long, a continuance X 2

Vol. III.

244

of the fame extravagance that had diffipated his own fortune, foon diffipating her's alfo. It may be imagined that I did not remain long in the poffeffion of fuch a mafter. He loft me the next evening after his marriage, on a bet that he could repeat the Lord's Prayer, which he laid on purpose to lofe, in order to prove how entirely he had got rid of the prejudices of education.

## CHAP. LXIII.

Chryfal makes fome reflections, not likely to be much regarded. His mafter pays a love-wift to a young lady, whoge father interpoles unpolitely, and makes fome out ofthe-way objections. Chryfal's mafter bits upon a febrme for getting over them. He proposes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little diftance.

I HAVE, on former occafions, given you a fufficient deteription how people of fathion fipend their time in gaming houfes, where, though every meeting produces new misfortunes to fome of the company, there is fuch a famenels in the manner, as will not bear repetition, and mult cloy any creature not abfolutely under infatuation, or obliged to make a trade of it for bread, as neither of which was the cafe of my new mafter, he left the company early, to purfue pleafures more in his own tafte.

In no infrance are the contradictions in human conduct fo ftrongly thewn, as in that of man to woman. He who would lose his life rather than violate the firictest principles of honour or honefty (as they are abfurdly diftinguished from each other) in his intercourse with another man, not only fcruples not to fludy deceit, and practice the blackeft and bafeft villanies againft woman, but will even glory in the fuccefs of them, when accomplifhed, without thewing remorfe in himfelf, or meeting reproof from others. The reafon of this is generally faid to be man's partiality to his own caufe, which, as he has the power of judging in his hands, whether by ulurpation or right it matters not makes him pardon in others the crime he would be glad to commit himfelf. But, without exculpating him in the leaft, woman bears a heavy

frare

hare in the blame of her fex's ruin. I mean not by henimmediate confint in her own cafe, but by the countenance which fhe fhows to the perpetrators of it, in that of others; it being as certain in fact, as it is grofs and abfurd to thought, that the fureft recommendation to the general favour of women is the fame of having ruined numbers of them.

245

Whether this proceeds from a vain ambition of triumphing over the triumpher, or an affectation of difdaining to efpoule the caufe of the fallen, as having forfitted the common regards of humanity, makes no difference in the confequence, whatever it may in the erime, as it opens in opportunity to the fpoiler to extend his conquefts often upon themfelves, in the midft of their fecurity; whereas, would women fhow a true lenfe of the honour of their fex, by refuing every kind of intercourfe with fuch as had violated it, man's partiality to himfelf would lofe its effect, and all his defigns upon them be reftrained within the proper boundaries of virtue.

From the place where I came into the poffeffion of my new mafter, he went to pay a vifit to'a young lady of uncommon beauty and merit, with whom he was violently in love; that is, he was earneftly bent upon gratifying his defire for her, at the expence of her ruin; an enterprize for which he was eminently qualified, being polfeffed of all the advantages of youth, fortune, and addrefs, and abfolutely free from every reftraint of principle, as he had proved on feveral fuccefsful occafions of the fame kind. The reception he met flowed that he had made an interest in her heart; but all his experience in the science of intrigue could not elude the vigilance of her virtue for a moment, nor find the least opening for any attack upon her honour. Such difficulties only redoubled his ardour. As he was confidering, therefore, next morning, how he flould proceed, he was interrupted in his meditations, by a vifit from his miftrefs's father. After fome time ipent in common chat, I have taken ' the liberty to wait upon you, fir,' faid the father, ' about an affair, the importance of which to my happinels will · apologize, VOLO III. 2 X3 )

216

s apologize, for any feeming unpoliteness in it. I have for fome time taken notice of the frequency of yourvifits to my houfe, the honour of which I am juilly fen-· fible of, but not fo far dazzled by, but I can fee the ' motive of them through it; and, therefore, must for " many reasons beg leave to defire that you will difcon-" tinue them."

' I-I-I don't understand you, fir;' answered my master, a good deal disconcerted at so unexpected an addrefs. . I have no motive that I defire to conceal, or is ' any way inconfiftent with the character of a gentleman.' ' -Pardon me, fir,' replied the other, ' I mean no fuch thing. But yet, what may be thought confiftent with ' that character in fome things, may be very inconfistent " with the happinels of a father. To be plain, fir, I am not ' fo unacquainted with the world, but I can fee all your ' vifits are paid to my daughter : and as fhe is not upon ' a level with you, either in family or fortune, for a wife, " I must repeat my request, that you will drop a pursuit " which mult, therefore, have another view."- " You do ' injustice to your daughter,' returned my master, recovered from his furprife, and convinced that it was in vain to diffemble any longer, ' to fay that the is not upon a · level with any man alive. I am above the vain pride " of family ; and acto fortune, my own fatisfies me, with-' out hazarding my happinels to feek for more.'

" Thefe,' faid the lady's father, ' are truly the fenti-" ments of a gentleman, nor have I any doubt of the in-· cerity with which you declare them. But there are · other confiderations that make it imposfible to carry them into execution. You and my daughter profes different principles of religion ; and as I can by no " means expect that you should change your's, fo, I hope, " the is too firmly established in her's, to quit them for " any worldly honour or advantage."

This was a firoke my mafter was not prepared for. He acquielced, therefore, feemingly, with the best grace he could, to avoid entering more explicitly into the lubject, till he should have time to concert measures for geto ting

0 247

ting over this new difficulty, for his honour was now piqued, and he refolved to itop at nothing, if only to punith the infolence of her father, in prefuming to forbid him his house. Accordingly, after revolving a variety of ichemes, he fixed upon one which he thought could not fail. Big with this hope, he went next morning to wait upon his miftrefs, notwithstanding the interdiction of her father, and finding her alone, after fome moments of mutual confusion, on the circumstances of such a meeting, ' I-I-I-I am come, madam,' faid my mafter, hefitating and blufhing as he fpoke, ' I am come in confequence of what paffed between your father and me eyelterday, of which I prefume he has informed you. It " never was my defign to difavow a paffion, upon which depends the happinels of my life. I only waited the fome particular circumstances should enable me to de-' clare it with more convenience. But, as he has made " the discovery, that referve is no longer necessary. If, therefore, madam, I can be to happy as to find favour 'in your fight, all his objections, I presume, will be re-' moved, by my offering to marry you directly; on this fole condition, that our marriage shall be kept inviolably fecret, till I have accomplifhed fome affairs, to which ' you muft be fenfible the difference of our religions would be a prejudice. The ceremony shall be performed by any clergyman you pleafe, in the prefence of your father, and any other witneffes in whele fecrefy we can confide, and every thing done that can convince you of the fincerity and honour of my attachment. Speak then, deared madam, and make me happy, by complying with a pro pofal that has your happinets in view equally with my " own.'- I fhould be unworthy of the honour you d me,' aniwered fhe, the blufh of true modefty heighten ing the charms of her beauty; ' if I could let it interfer ' with fuperior obligations. When the approbation c ' my father gives a proper fanction to your application t me, you will probably find no great difficulty in mak ' ing my inclination go hand ishand with my duty." Her father just then entering, relieved her from the en

235

barraffment of any further conversation upon fo delicate a fubject ; and the withdrew. But my mafter was under no fuch difficulty. Encouraged by a reply fo favourable to his hopes, he directly repeated his propofal to her father, who promifed him a decifive aniwer next morning. As the manner of his reception left him no room to doubt of his faccefs, he went again at the time appointed, when the father gave his confent without difficulty, as did his miftreis, flipulating only for a fhort delay, till fhe fhould return from the wedding of a young lady, her coufin, who lived at fome diffance in the country, and had engaged her to attend her upon that occafion. As he could make no just objection to this, however difagreeable fuspenfion of his hopes, he confented with a compliment, that his refolution was too firmly fixed for any time to make him change it, and then took his leave, exulting at the fuccefs of his project.

# CHAP. LXIV.

Chryfal's mafter is privately married. Not fatisfied with one wife for lowe, he wants another for money. He propoles the matter to his wife, on whole refufal be difclose bis grand fcheme; in which, deep as it is laid, he has the mortification to find himfelf anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himfelf. Confequences of this difcovery. Chryfal's mafter takes a common method of hiencing fcandal. Chryfal changes his fervice.

THE finiles of hope make the fun-fine of life; as the mind is then too intent upon the object in expectation to fee the inconveniences which afterwards imbitter the enjoyments of it. The abfence of his miftrefs, though confiderably longer than he had apprehended, paffed away pleafantly in the thought of his approaching hapinefs. As foon as fhe returned, therefore, he directly claimed the performance of her premie, to which all parties conenting, they were married by his own chapiain, in the vivate manner he defired. Poffeffed thus of his wiftes, us next care was to enjoy them with the moft convenince to himfelf. For the purpose he took a houfe next o his own; and opting a fecret communication between

them, he removed her thither, as he could not take her directly home, without declaring his marriage.

249

Mortifying as the mysterious appearance of fuch a fituation must have been to her, she made no objection, but complied implicitly, in that and every thing elfe, as if the had no will but his. Paffions merely fenfual are foon lated. Though the refemblance of this intercourfe to an intrigue heightened the pleafure of it, he had not carried it on long, when an opportunity of marrying to great advantage, in the phrafe of the world, awoke his ambition, and gave his wifhes another turn. After fome little conflict with himfelf, in which, however, the object in view provedatoo powerful for that in poficifion, he relolved to break the matter to his wife. Accordingly, as they fat together one morning at breakfalt, after fome exprefions of uncommon tendernefs, ' The regard which my deareft girl has always fhown for me,' faid he, blushing at his balenels as he looke, ' convinces me that " the will not only take pleafure to hear of any thing to ' my advantage, but allo forward it as far as may be in her power.'- ' I hope no action of my life,' anfwered the, furprifed at his speaking in such a manner, ' fince I have been married to you, has given any realon to doubt either my duty or affection, that you fhould imagine fuch a preface neceffary to introduce whatever you think proper to command. - Very true, my dearest "life. But-but-but there are fome things, the nature " of which requires delicacy, even to you, whole underftanding is superior to the foibles of your fex. You "know the young lady Worthland ! I have received intimation that my addreffes would not be unacceptable to her. Now, as her rank and fortune would entitle me to expect the first honours in the flate, I have that confidence in the attachment and love of my deareft girl, asto think you will not oppofe my intereft.'- ' As how !' replied fhe eagerly, alarmed at the hint, but unwilling to think fo meanly of him, as to enderstand it. As how ! What interest can you possibly have in her rank and fortune ?'- ' The interest which the law gives an · hufband. 1

259

. hufband. Poffeffion-abfolute poffeffion of the whole." - 'An hufband! Good God ! how can that be? Are ' you not already married ?'- ' True, my deareft life! "But, as that marriage is a fecret, if it can be kept fo, ' it will be no obstacle: You shall remain, us you are, the wife of my love and I will be only the hufband of " her fortune."-" How you men, whole minds are " ftronger, take pleafure in playing with the weakness of " woman ! The very mention of fuch a thing even in jeft " (for it is impoffible you can be ferious) ftrikes me with " horror.'- ' In jeft ! I am ferious upon my honour; and · expect your immediate compliance, as a proof of your ' duty and affection.'- ' And can you mertion honour in the fame breath with fuch a bale proposal ? What "a profanation of the word ! But, whether you are ferious, or not, I must be to on fuch an occasion; and " therefore I declare that I never will facrifice both ho-· nour and confcience, by giving what you are pleafed to ' call a proof of duty and affection, but what would re-" ally prove that I had neither."- " This romantic fpirit, " child, much as you think it becomes you, is all thrown ' away. I am determined; and you must submit. But · let me tell you, that on the manner of that fubmiffion depends your future welfare. If you comply properly with my proposal, of will make a fettlement upon you, • that fhall exceed any expectations you could naturally ' have had in life, and remain your hufband in every thing but the empty name. But if you attempt making the · least opposition to my will, I cast you off from this mo-" ment to beggary and fhame; nor fhall any late repent-' ance ever bring me to receive you again ; fo, confider " the confequence, before you rafhly run upon your ruin ; " I shall expect your final resolution to-morrow."- " For ' that you need not wait a moment. I fear no confequence " that can attend my doing what is right. The duty of · obedience I have fulfilled in its utmost extent, by immuring myfelf thug and forfeiting my good name to keep your fecret; but while my confcience witneffed for the putty of my heart, I regarded not the prefent · cenfure

DSE

• cenfure of the world, no more than I do now, from the • fame principle of virtuous refolution, your vain threats, • for in fuch a light the laws of my country, enable me to • hold them.'—• The laws of your country, madam! • Then claim their protection, if you pleafe; buty you will • find that they afford none to you. Such marriages as • your's, between people profeffing different religions, are • made void by thole laws, and therefore, if you think • proper to depend upon them, I give you this notice, • that you have nothing to expect from me but what they • fhall procure you.'—• And was this your motive,' returned fhe, with a fpirit raifed by indignation, • for de-• firing a pflyate marriage? Impoffible! you could not, • cannot be fo bafe. You only have a mind to try my • refolution, which you fhall ever find immoveable in thes, • and every caufe of virtue and honour,'

' Madam, I have no more time to trifle in this manner; ' therefore, once more I defire you to let me know your final determination ; for notwithstanding this behaviour, ' I ftill have such a regard for you, that I am unwilling ' to take an answer which must separate us for ever. 'Think, then, before you fpeak; and let my making ' you this generous offer, and preventing your expoling ' yourself in vain, teach you a proper return of grati-' tude.'-' I want not a moment to determine between ' virtue and vice, infamy and honour.'- ' Then take the confequence; and blame yourfelf, when it is too late.'-' I will; if any blame falls on me. And now that I fee ' you are ferious, in return for the notice you have fo generoufly given me, I le you know, that I have ob-' viated the advantage you flatter yourfelf you have over ' me, by comforming legally to your religion, before I " was married to you."- " Confesion ! what is that you fay ? When, where did you conform ?'- When I went to the wedding of my coulin, as you will find upon in-" quiry, which I Advife you to make? before you proceed farther in a scheme, that can one expose you to worle ' infamy than that with which you threatened me.'-' Infernal witch ? Was this your love?'- No; it was < the

242

the prudence of my friends. My love could harbour no ' doubt of you ; but they knew you better ; and took this " honeft, wile precaution to guard against villany, " which I now am fenfible they forefaw; and, therefore, ' as you have thought proper to refer me to the law, I ' now tell you that I will immediately claim its protec-' tion, and declare my marriage, nor fuffer any longer in " the opinion of the world, by a fecrefy that was enjoined . for fo bafe a purpofe; by which I fhall at least have the fatisfaction of faving another woman from falling into the ' fnare laid for her.'-Saying this, fhe flung out of the room, to conceal tears which fhe thought would betray a weaknefs unworthy of her, and could no longer refirain. The nature of my mafter's meditations on this difcovery may be eafily conceived. He curfed that foolifh fondnels which had thus led him blindfold into his own fnare; and damned all woman kind, in revenge for being foiled at his own weapons by one of the fex.

When he had vented his rage in this manner for fone time, a fudden gleam of hope flattered him, that what fhe faid might poffibly have been only the inflantaneous fuggeftion of refentment and difpair, without being really true. Pleafed with the thought, he fant directly to make the proper inquiry, the refult of which confirmed the defeat of all his defigne. But this was not the only mortification he fuffered. His wife, the moment the left him, went to her father, and difcovering to him her hufband's bafenefs, he fupported her in her refolution of declaring her marriage, as the most proper means to prevent his forming any further fchemes against her.

The confequence is obvious. The public received fuch a curious piece of icandal with pleafure; and paid refpect to his wife, if only to thow contempt for him; particularly the women, who made her's the caufe of the fex, as he had precluded all further defigns upon himfelf, by marriage.

This though, however flattering to her vanity and refentment at the time, only widened a breach that the wifhed to clefe. His pride was picqued to difappoint her

delign,

0258

design, as she had his, and he left her to languish out the rest of her life in worse than widowhood, and repent of the folly of attempting to attach herself to a man who she knew had betrayed others of the sex.

As for my master, this detection made him desperate. He threw off every appearance of regard even to common decency, which he thought could no longer be of use to him, and determined to bear down scandal, by glorying in his vices; in the performance of which gallant resolution he gave me to a stage dancer, who gave me to an helf-pay officer, who gave me to a Jew.

## CHAP. LXV.

Chrysal comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion.

I DID not remain long in the possession of the Jew: he passed me off to a pawn-broker, in the purchase of old cloaths, which he was going to carry abroad.—Strange were the scenes, and unexpected the faces, which I saw in this place, where every necessary utensil of life, every ornament of luxury, was deposited, as in a place of security, by their respective owners: but your own experience makes any particular description of this place, or its manifold mysterious trade, unnecessary to you.

The misfortune of my size (which had been continually lessening ever since the depredations committed on me by young Aminadab) kept me a prisoner here till Saturday night, when my master always puts off his light. coin, just before he shuts shop, to the poor people, whose necessity requiring an immediate supply for the support of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and so must even bear the loss .- Such a person did he think you, and accordingly he gave me to you: but the moment I came into your possession, and found that you were the chosen of ten thousand, the first-born of science, whom wisdom had instructed, and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the cy fugitive, unable longer to elude your pursuit, had been obliged to consent to a revelation of her most VoL. III. occult

254 0

occult wisdom, and to entrust you with the command of that chain which links the animal and material worlds together; the moment, I say, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the intelligence to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greatest pleasure, and waited impatient for the moment when I should confer this completion of human happiness and honour upon you; a pleasure that was heightened by the noble constancy you shewed, when the smell of the hot ox-cheek, as you came by the cook's shop, raised that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you should purchase some of it to satisfy your humger, or preserve me for this last experiment, in which the latter was so gloriously triumphant.

The auspicious moment is arrived; nature labours in the throes of mystic birth; and lo! the philosophic king arises in all the glory of the morning. Attend to my words! receive the consummation of human knowledge. To apprehend this secret cause, you must know

O doleful and deplorable event! never to be told without wailing; never to be read without tears. Just as the spirit had arrived at this most interesting point, human weakness, unable to suppress the impulse of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-check set in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raised in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fortid steam. The spirit started at the unpardonable offence to his phirity, and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation, and abhorrence, vanished from my sight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was mere than I could bear; I<sup>o</sup>sunk under its weight, and swooned away upon the floor,

where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life that was a burthen under such a disappointment. The labour of my life being lost, the *one* moment in a thousand years slipped away in vain. But such is the consequence of human weakness; such is the end of all the works of man.

# CONCLUSION.

And now, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether thou art a tailor, whose principal debtor is made a lord—a physician, whose nostrum is discovered—a cobler, who sleepest over thy last, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treasure—a poet, whose play is refused—or a senator, who hast mortgaged thine ate to purchase a seat in parliament, just before its dissolution, attend to the instruction of my words, and learn from my example. Seize the present moment, nor depend upon the future; let reason curb expectation; reduce imagination to common sense; and bring your wishes within the bounds of your real wants; so shall Industry banish Necessity from your habitation, and Content turn all your possession\_into gold.

GI'S SI

255